

Vol. 178, No. 1

Winter 2024

# The NEHG Register



The Journal of  
American Genealogy



The First Church of Boston occupied this building from 1712 to 1808. It stood on the same spot as its wooden predecessor which was destroyed by fire. William<sup>1</sup> Briscoe was admitted a member on 30 January 1640[/41]; see pp. 5–51.

NEW ENGLAND HISTORIC  
GENEALOGICAL SOCIETY

[AmericanAncestors.org](http://AmericanAncestors.org)

## In this issue

**Origins:** Briscoe, Humfrey,  
Meade, Muzzey, Palgrave,  
Rodman, Rotch, Tidd

**Families:** Briscoe, Wilson

\$20 per year, \$9.95 per issue

NEW ENGLAND HISTORIC GENEALOGICAL SOCIETY

AmericanAncestors.org

99–101 Newbury Street, Boston, Massachusetts 02116-3007

Receipt of the *Register* is a benefit of NEHGS membership.

For membership information, call 888-296-3447, fax 617-536-7307,  
or visit [AmericanAncestors.org/join](http://AmericanAncestors.org/join).

*To advance the study of family history in America and beyond, the New England Historic Genealogical Society educates, inspires, and connects people through our scholarship, collections, and expertise.*

---

THE NEW ENGLAND HISTORICAL AND GENEALOGICAL REGISTER

*The New England Historical and Genealogical Register*, published quarterly since 1847, is the flagship journal of American genealogy and the oldest journal in the field, supporting the purpose of the New England Historic Genealogical Society ([AmericanAncestors.org](http://AmericanAncestors.org)). The complete *Register*, 1847 to present, is searchable as a database at [AmericanAncestors.org](http://AmericanAncestors.org).

**Consulting Editors, 2024**

ROBERT CHARLES ANDERSON, FASG • CHERRY FLETCHER BAMBERG, FASG

SCOTT ANDREW BARTLEY • CHRISTOPHER CHALLENGER CHILD

CHARLES M. HANSEN, FASG • GALE ION HARRIS, PH.D., FASG

DAVID ALLEN LAMBERT • RHONDA R. MCCLURE

NATHAN W. MURPHY, AG, FASG • GARY BOYD ROBERTS

GEORGE FREEMAN SANBORN JR., FASG • WILLIAM B. SAXBE, JR., CG, FASG

CLIFFORD L. STOTT, CG, FASG • NATHANIEL LANE TAYLOR, FASG

---

**Submitting an article to the *Register*:** The editors welcome articles, especially from new authors. Articles typically focus on New England, on out-migrations from New England, and on New York State; articles on other topics and areas (including those with an international scope) will also be considered. Articles treating nineteenth- and twentieth-century subject matter are most welcome.

*Register* articles usually fall into one of the following categories: immigrant origins with a genealogical summary; problem-solving articles with a genealogical summary; genealogical accounts of families, especially families for which no genealogy now exists [normally limited to three generations]; and source material.

Submission guidelines for authors are given at [AmericanAncestors.org/browse/publications/the-register/submission-guidelines](http://AmericanAncestors.org/browse/publications/the-register/submission-guidelines). Articles should be written in Microsoft Word. It is advisable to send an email to the editor, at [register@nehgs.org](mailto:register@nehgs.org), describing your proposed article.

**Book Reviews:** The *Register* reviews a limited number of books. Send books for consideration, with complete ordering information, to Editor of the *Register*, NEHGS, 99–101 Newbury Street, Boston, MA 02116.

# The New England Historical and Genealogical Register®

The Journal of American Genealogy

---

- 3 Editorial
- 5 William<sup>1</sup> Briscoe of Boston, Massachusetts, His English Origin, and the Brisko and Wilson Families of Cumberland  
*Austin W. Spencer, Maureen Markt Dearborn,  
and David Curtis Dearborn*
- 52 The Identity of Anne, Wife of Dr. Richard<sup>1</sup> Palgrave of Charlestown, Massachusetts  
*Robert Battle*
- 73 An Update to the Later Life and Children of John Humfrey (1597–1651), Deputy Governor of Massachusetts Bay Colony  
*James Arthur Heffernan*
- 87 Mary Muzzey, Second Wife of Joseph<sup>3</sup> Tidd of Lexington, Massachusetts  
*Gale Ion Harris*
- 90 The Whereabouts of Gabriel<sup>1</sup> Meade of Dorchester, Massachusetts, Prior to Emigration  
*Randy A. West*
- 95 The Rotches and the Rodmans: A Tale of New Bedford Quakerism  
Part 4: The Fall Out  
*Rhonda R. McClure (concluded from 177 [2023]:415)*  
(Index to Parts 1–4 of this article begins on page 106)
- 

## Editorial Staff

HENRY B. HOFF, FASG, *Editor* ([register@nehgs.org](mailto:register@nehgs.org))

DAVID CURTIS DEARBORN, FASG, *Associate Editor*

---

Funding provided in part by



*This publication is supported  
in part from a bequest by  
Ruth Chauncey Bishop*



# NEW ENGLAND HISTORIC GENEALOGICAL SOCIETY

AmericanAncestors.org

## EXECUTIVE ADMINISTRATION

RYAN J. WOODS, *President and CEO*

MEGHAN E. HALLOCK, *Chief Advancement Officer*

D. BRENTON SIMONS, *President Emeritus*

## BOARD OF TRUSTEES

DAVID MARTIN TREBING (DC), *Chair*

M. DAVID SHERRILL (FL), *Vice Chair*

BONNIE A. REILLY (IN), *Second Vice Chair*

JOHN E. CORCORAN (MA), *Treasurer*

GERARD A. HALPIN III (MA), *Secretary*

MARK KIMBALL NICHOLS (MA), *Corresponding Secretary*

## 2024

BRENDA L. JOHNSON (AZ) • ANDREW P. LANGLOIS (CT) • JOHN S. RANDO, JR. (MA)

HELEN E. R. SAYLES (MA) • ELIZABETH B. VITTON (CT)

## 2025

ROBB ALEY ALLAN (FL) • NORDAHL L. BRUE (FL) • SUSAN E. CARLSON (AZ)

MARK T. COX IV (VA) • JONATHAN BUCK TREAT (MA) • NANCY CLAY WEBSTER (NE)

BRENDA M. WILLIAMS (MA)

## 2026

KELI D. LEVINE (CT) • JO ANNE C. MAKELY (MA) • NANCY S. MAULSBY (CT)

ERIC N. WARD (MA)

## HONORARY TRUSTEES

JUDITH AVERY • BRUCE R. BARTLETT • JOHN G. L. CABOT • STEPHEN H. CASE • RALPH J. CRANDALL • JOHN M. FLEMING • WILLIAM M. FOWLER, JR. • JUDITH WAITE FREEMAN  
DONALD R. FRIARY • HENRY LOUIS GATES, JR. • PRISCILLA C. GREENLEES • THOMAS B. HAGEN • JUDITH HUBER HALSETH • VIRGINIA M. HAMISTER • KENNETH E. HAUGHTON  
ROBERT F. HENDRICKSON • ELIZABETH B. JOHNSON • AMBASSADOR JOHN LOEB • PETER S. LYNCH • LINDA A. PESCOLIDIO • FRANK C. RIPLEY • STACY SCHIFF • MERIWETHER C. SCHMID • ERIC B. SCHULTZ • ALVY RAY SMITH • LYNN TROWBRIDGE • JUSTIN L. WYNER

*The NEHG Register* (ISSN 0028-4785) is published in winter, spring, summer, and fall by New England Historic Genealogical Society, 99–101 Newbury Street, Boston, Massachusetts 02116. An electronic version is free with membership. Members who want to receive a print copy in the mail must pay \$20 per year. For subscription and membership information, call 888-296-3447 or visit [AmericanAncestors.org/join](http://AmericanAncestors.org/join).

Copyright © 2024 by New England Historic Genealogical Society. All rights reserved. No part of this periodical may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording, or any information storage or retrieval system, without permission in writing from the copyright holder, except for the inclusion of brief quotations in a review. NEHGS is a nonprofit corporation qualified under Section 501(c)(3) of the Internal Revenue Code. The periodical's name and titles and headings are trademarks of NEHGS and the name and logo of NEHGS are registered in the U.S. Patent and Trademark Office and may not be used without the express permission of the Society's Board of Trustees. All contents of this periodical are archived for member access at [AmericanAncestors.org](http://AmericanAncestors.org). Periodicals postage is paid at Boston, Massachusetts, and additional mailing offices.

**POSTMASTER:** Please send address changes to Member Services, NEHGS, 99–101 Newbury Street, Boston, Massachusetts 02116-3007.

## Editorial

A 1907 *Register* article by the eminent genealogist Joseph Gardner Bartlett noted the family connection between the Rev. John<sup>1</sup> Wilson of Boston and William<sup>1</sup> Briscoe of Boston. William was shown to be a son of the Rev. Guy Briscoe, a graduate of Queen's College, Oxford, and longtime rector of Sundridge, Kent. Despite these promising clues, nothing of significance has been published subsequently on William's English antecedents or American descendants. Our lead article, **William<sup>1</sup> Briscoe of Boston, Massachusetts, His English Origin, and the Brisko and Wilson Families of Cumberland**, by Austin W. Spencer, Maureen Markt Dearborn, and David Curtis Dearborn, is a collaborative effort, with Spencer contributing the English portion and the Dearborns following the American family in Boston records. Guy Briscoe himself belonged to a Visitation family which, like the Wilsons, traced its origins to Cumberland. Although the 1615 Visitation of Cumberland traces Guy's line for ten generations, it can only be documented with certainty to his grandfather, Guy<sup>c</sup> Briscoe (say 1500–1572) of Westward, Cumberland. William<sup>1</sup> Briscoe's known descendants stayed in Boston, living along what is now Washington Street and in Boston's South End.

Dr. Richard<sup>1</sup> Palgrave arrived in New England in 1630 with the Winthrop Fleet and settled in Charlestown, Massachusetts. His English origins and family are well known, but the identity of his wife Anne has been a mystery. In **The Identity of Anne, Wife of Dr. Richard<sup>1</sup> Palgrave of Charlestown, Massachusetts**, author Robert Battle identifies her as Anne Sowgate, daughter of William Sowgate of Elsing, Norfolk, glover, and his wife Martha Vincent. The discovery of William's 1626 will led to the breakthrough. The author shows that while there were several contemporaneous Richard Palgraves, examination of each shows that the others can be eliminated as Anne's possible husband.

John<sup>1</sup> Humfrey was another prominent immigrant to Massachusetts Bay whose history in New England is well known. However, less is known about his life after his return to England in 1641. In **An Update to the Later Life and Children of John Humfrey (1597–1651), Deputy Governor of Massachusetts Bay Colony**, author James Arthur Heffernan examines the final decade of Humfrey's life, including his role in the Providence Island Company and his military career. The article reveals the existence of more children than previously known—sixteen in all—by four wives. Thanks to a series of chancery suits involving the disposition of Humfrey's estate, we now have a much fuller picture of his life and the makeup of his family.

Joseph<sup>3</sup> Tidd (1661–1730) of Lexington, Massachusetts had three wives all named Mary. Although the third wife was long ago identified, the surnames of the first two have remained unknown. The second Mary is known to have died in Lexington in 1716 or 1717. In **Mary Muzzey, Second Wife of Joseph<sup>3</sup> Tidd of Lexington, Massachusetts**, author Gale Ion Harris proves that she was a daughter of Benjamin and Sarah (\_\_\_\_) Muzzey of Lexington. The proof is contained in a 1732/3 quitclaim deed, in which five of Mary's Tidd children conveyed their interest in the estate of their grandfather, Benjamin Muzzey late of Lexington, deceased.

In **The Whereabouts of Gabriel<sup>1</sup> Meade of Dorchester, Massachusetts, Prior to Emigration**, author Randy A. West, drawing on research posted online, reveals that the immigrant, whose wife is known to have been Joan, married Joan Frewin in Henley on Thames, Oxfordshire, in 1628. In 1634, Gabriel Meade, his wife, and family gave a bond to the borough of High Wycombe, Buckinghamshire, eleven miles northeast of Henley, against any claim on the borough for relief from poverty. Parish register entries in both places help bolster the identification.

We conclude with the final installment of **The Rotches and The Rodmans: A Tale of New Bedford Quakerism, Part 4: The Fall Out**, by Rhonda R. McClure. The previous installment discussed the schism that developed between the Old Lights and “New Lights” within the New Bedford Quaker community in the early 1820s. Here, we see the culmination of this split with the removal of Elizabeth Rodman and Mary Rotch, members of two of the richest families in the city, as Elders in 1824. Over the next ten years, nineteen men, most of them relatives of the two women, were disowned from Meeting, with a few resigning. The result was a separation from the faith that had guided both families for generations. An every-name index to Parts 1–4 of **The Rotches and The Rodmans** is included in this issue.

– *Henry B. Hoff and David Curtis Dearborn*



# William<sup>1</sup> Briscoe of Boston, Massachusetts, His English Origin, and the Brisko and Wilson Families of Cumberland

*Austin W. Spencer, Maureen Markt Dearborn,  
and David Curtis Dearborn\**

---

William<sup>1</sup> Briscoe, a tailor, was admitted an inhabitant of Boston on 24 February 1639/40. On that occasion, he also was allowed “to have a great Lott, for eight heads, at the mount.”<sup>[1]</sup> He was admitted to the First Church in Boston on 30 11th month [January] 1640[/1] when he was identified as a tailor by trade.<sup>[2]</sup> He was admitted a freeman of Massachusetts Bay Colony, 2 June 1641.<sup>[3]</sup>

Despite his land allotment for a family of eight, William’s known family consists only of his wife, Cicely, and four sons: Daniel, Joseph, Benjamin, and Ezekiel. Cicely and Daniel’s relationships to William are documented by their admissions to the same church: “Cicely Briscoe the wife of our brother Willyam Briscoe,” 4 5<sup>th</sup> month [July] 1641, and “Daniell Briscoe the sonne of our brother Willyam Briscoe,” 17 2<sup>nd</sup> month [April] 1642.<sup>[4]</sup>

William’s other sons are established, directly or indirectly, by a deed that Robert Gibbs and his wife Elizabeth made in William’s favor on 9 September 1662. Unlike a typical warranty deed, Robert and Elizabeth did not make an unconditional grant. They specified that the land, located in Boston, was to pass:

---

\* This article is a collaborative effort between Mr. Spencer, who researched the English portion of the Briscoe family and confirmed the links to the immigrant William<sup>1</sup> Briscoe, and the Dearborns who researched William’s American descendants.

<sup>1</sup> [William H. Whitmore,] *Second Report of the Record Commissioners: Boston Records, 1634–1660. & Book of Possessions*, 2nd ed. (Boston: Rockwell & Churchill, City Printers, 1881) [Boston Record Commissioners, vol. 2], 48. Robert Charles Anderson, “Focus on Immigration,” *Great Migration Newsletter* 17 (2008):27, points out that “the mount” was located at the site of Braintree. Nathaniel Briscoe or Biscoe, a wealthy tanner, settled in Watertown by 1642. He belonged to a Buckinghamshire family that by 1687 claimed arms similar to the Briscoe family of Crofton, described below, but they do not appear to be closely related; Nathaniel’s lineage is: EdwardA, JohnB, EdwardC (Henry Bond, *Genealogies of the Families and Descendants of the Early Settlers of Watertown, Massachusetts, Including Waltham and Weston . . .*, 2nd ed., 2 vols. [Boston: NEHGS, 1855–1860], 1:42, 2:683–684; John Challenor Covington Smith, *Pedigree of the Family of Biscoe* [London: Mitchell and Hodges, 1887], 1, 3–6).

<sup>2</sup> Richard D. Pierce, ed., *The Records of the First Church in Boston, 1630–1868*, 3 vols., Publications of the Colonial Society of Massachusetts, vols. 39–41 (Boston: Published by the Society, 1961), 1:32.

<sup>3</sup> Nathaniel B. Shurtleff, ed., *Records of the Governor and Company of the Massachusetts Bay in New England. Printed by Order of the Legislature*, 6 vols. (Boston: Press of William White, 1853; reprint, New York: AMS Press, 1968), 1:378.

<sup>4</sup> Pierce, *Records of the First Church in Boston* [note 2], 1:33, 36.

vnto him the said William Brisco during his naturall life, & after his decease one mojety or halfen deale pt of y<sup>c</sup> whole to Ezekiell Brisco, his youngest sonne & his heyres foreuer, the other mojety or halfen deale pt of y<sup>c</sup> whole to Benjamine Brisco another of his Sonnes & his heyres, so as y<sup>c</sup> said Benjamine & his heires pay vnto Joseph Brisco his Grand Child at his age of one & twenty yeares, the Sume of thirty pounds in Currant pay of this Country, for Siluer.<sup>[5]</sup>

Neither Benjamin nor Ezekiel had a known son named Joseph. Instead, William's grandchild would appear to be the Joseph Briscoe who was born to *Joseph* and Abigail, on 21 August 1658 at Boston, and hence was four years old at the date of the deed.<sup>[6]</sup> That he was the grandson of William, rather than Benjamin, was established at the Suffolk County Court that began on 4 November 1679. "Joseph Brisco Grand Son of William Brisco dece<sup>d</sup>" sued Ezekiel Brisco's estate "for the Summe of thirty pounds in currant pay for Silver which is due unto him as the gift of his s<sup>d</sup> GrandFather upon the purchase of a house and Land from m<sup>r</sup> Robert Gibbs by Deed dated. 9<sup>th</sup> 7<sup>br</sup> 1662." Joseph further recited that the money should have been paid by Benjamin, but that Benjamin had sold his half of the property to Thomas Danforth, Esq., who in turn had conveyed it to Ezekiel. After Ezekiel died, his estate passed into the hands of Rebecca, his widow and administratrix, who then remarried Captain William Wright. Joseph won a jury verdict, and an execution was issued on 1 December 1679. Presumably that writ was served to Captain Wright.<sup>[7]</sup>

Joseph's father, the elder Joseph, drowned in Boston on 1 January 1657[/8],<sup>[8]</sup> leaving not only his pregnant widow but also a poem in his memory by Rev. John Wilson of Boston. Wilson took his theme from an anagram of Joseph's name—"Job cries hopes"—and mentioned the cause of death.<sup>[9]</sup> Joseph's widow, Abigail, was the daughter of John and Susanna (\_\_\_) Compton, of Roxbury and Boston.<sup>[10]</sup> If William Briscoe was the other grandfather of the younger Joseph Briscoe, then Joseph's father must be another of William's sons.

<sup>5</sup> *Suffolk Deeds, Liber IV* (Boston: Rockwell & Churchill, City Printers, 1888), 68–69.

<sup>6</sup> William S. Appleton, [*Ninth*] *Report of the Record Commissioners Containing Boston Births, Baptisms, Marriages, and Deaths, 1630–1699* (Boston: Rockwell and Churchill, City Printers, 1883), 65.

<sup>7</sup> *Records of the Suffolk County Court, 1671–1680*, 2 vols., Publications of the Colonial Society of Massachusetts, vols. 29–30 (Boston: The Society, 1933), 2:1076. Benjamin's deed to Danforth, 16 Sept. 1670, is in *Suffolk Deeds, Liber VI* (Boston, Mass.: Rockwell and Churchill, City Printers, 1892), 221–223. Danforth's deed to Ezekiel, 3 Nov. 1671, is in *Suffolk Deeds, Liber IX* (Boston, Mass.: Rockwell and Churchill, City Printers, 1897), 180–181. Both deeds were joined by the grantor's wife (Sarah Briscoe and Mary Danforth) and included the payment of the silver to Joseph as a condition on the grantee.

<sup>8</sup> Appleton, *Boston Births, Baptisms, Marriages, and Deaths, 1630–1699* [note 6], 61.

<sup>9</sup> John Wilson, "A Copy of Verses Made by that Reverend Man of God Mr. John Wilson, Pastor to the first Church in Boston; On the sudden Death of M<sup>r</sup>. Joseph Brisco, Who was translated from Earth to Heaven Jan. 1. 1657," broadside ([Cambridge, Mass.: Samuel Green, 1657]), *American Memory* (loc.gov/resource/rbpe.0330030a/?sp=1&st=text).

<sup>10</sup> Robert Charles Anderson, George F. Sanborn Jr., and Melinde Lutz Sanborn, *The Great Migration: Immigrants to New England, 1634–1635, Vol. II, C–F* (Boston: NEHGS, 2001), 170–171.



## Rev. John<sup>1</sup> Wilson and the Hertfordshire–Cumberland Connection

It has long been known that Rev. John<sup>1</sup> Wilson regarded himself as kin to the Briscoe family. In his will, he made a bequest of 40s “To my cosin Benjamin Briscow,” who could only be William’s son.<sup>[11]</sup> Wilson was also socially connected with Elizabeth (Sheafe) Gibbs, a grantor of the 1662 deed. She was the granddaughter of Edmund Sheafe, whose brother Thomas Sheafe married Maria Wilson, a sister of Rev. John Wilson.<sup>[12]</sup>

John was the second surviving son of Rev. William<sup>A</sup> Wilson, D.D. (William<sup>B-C</sup>), rector of Cliffe, Kent, England, prebendary of St. Paul’s and Rochester cathedrals, and canon of St. George’s Chapel in Windsor Castle.<sup>[13]</sup> William’s sister Mary was the wife of Guy Briscoe, rector of “Sundriche” in Kent. Guy’s will, dated 26 May 1594 and probated 1 March 1594/[5], was first abstracted in the *Register* in 1888. It names his father, sister, wife, children (all minors), sister-in-law, brother-in-law, late father-in-law, and three “loving cousins,” and leaves a bequest to an expected child. The third of his four surviving sons was named William. His cousins were Alexander Briscoe of Watford, and Edward and Robert Briscoe of Aldenham, two adjacent parishes in Hertfordshire.<sup>[14]</sup>

In his account of the Wilson family, published in the *Register* in 1907, Joseph Gardner Bartlett proposes that William<sup>1</sup> Briscoe was the son of Guy and Mary, based on the wills of Guy Briscoe and John Wilson. Bartlett suggests that William was born about 1590.<sup>[15]</sup> As the second-youngest son of a woman who was already carrying another child in 1594, William could not have been born much later. If Bartlett is correct, John Wilson was a first cousin of William, and a first cousin once removed of Benjamin, his legatee. Bartlett does not call attention to William’s appearance in the will of Edmund Wilson, doctor of physic of St. Mary le Bow, London, the eldest son of Rev. William<sup>A</sup>, and the elder brother of Rev. John<sup>1</sup>. Edmund’s will, dated 28 September 1633, with a codicil two days later, and probated 11 October

---

<sup>11</sup> Suffolk County Probate, file 465. For a fuller summary of John Wilson’s biography and documentation in America, see Robert Charles Anderson, *The Winthrop Fleet: Massachusetts Bay Company Immigrants to New England, 1629–1630* (Boston: NEHGS, 2012), 678–683.

<sup>12</sup> Walter K. Watkins, “Some Guilford, Conn., Settlers and Their Relationship, or the Sheafe Family in England and New England,” *Register* 55 (1901): 208–220, at 210, 213–215, 217–218.

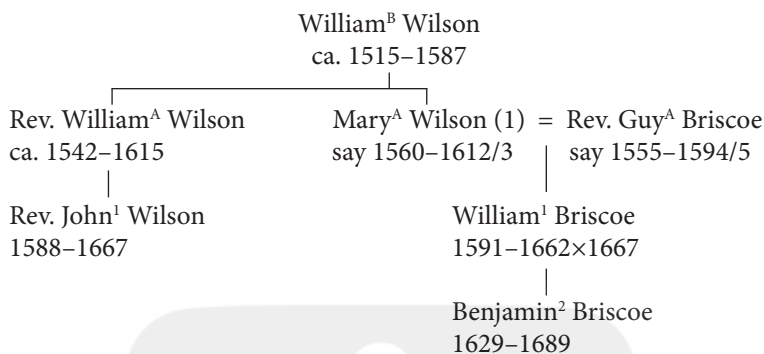
<sup>13</sup> Henry F. Waters, *Genealogical Gleanings in England*, 2 vols. (Boston: NEHGS, 1901), 1:54, 55. A brief sketch of William appears in William B. Saxbe Jr., “Sarah (Gerrish) King (1714–1798) of Salem, Massachusetts, and Her Descent from Nine Puritan Ministers,” *Register* 175 (2021):27, calling him William<sup>B</sup> as the grandfather of another Great Migration immigrant, Dorothy<sup>1</sup> (Sheafe) Whitfield. A more extended sketch of William, emphasizing his social and familial connections with other reform leaders in the Church of England, is in Robert Charles Anderson, *Puritan Pedigrees: The Deep Roots of the Great Migration to New England* (Boston: NEHGS, 2018), 147–153.

<sup>14</sup> Waters, *Genealogical Gleanings in England* [note 13], 1:267–268; Henry F. Waters, “Genealogical Gleanings in England,” *Register* 42 (1888):174–175. A complete transcript will appear below.

<sup>15</sup> Joseph Gardner Bartlett, “Ancestry and Descendants of Rev. John Wilson of Boston, Mass.,” *Register* 61 (1907): 36–37.

1633, remits a debt of £10 owed by his cousin William Briscoe.<sup>[16]</sup> Guy's son must have lived well into adulthood.

### Rev. John<sup>1</sup> Wilson and His Briscoe Cousins



Bartlett's genealogical placement of William<sup>1</sup> Briscoe is noticed occasionally by later writers.<sup>[17]</sup> However, none appears to notice that, like William Wilson, Guy also boasted a relationship—albeit at a farther remove—to men who had borne arms and whose family origins lay in Cumberland. A holder of arms in 1634, “*Argent, three greyhounds courant in pale sable . . . a mullet on a crescent for difference,*” was an Edward Brisco of Aldenham. He was the son and heir of Edward Brisco of Orgar Hall, and the grandson of Edward Brisco of Aldenham Wood. The latter had a younger brother named Alexander, as well as a younger son named Robert. Alexander and Edward of Aldenham Wood were the sons of yet another Edward Brisco of Aldenham.<sup>[18]</sup> This Edward seems

<sup>16</sup> Waters, *Genealogical Gleanings in England* [note 13], 1:55, 268–270, citing Register Russell, 89, Prerogative Court of Canterbury.

<sup>17</sup> Elizabeth E. Boice Jones, comp., *The Background of Mary Alice (Sharpe) Yalden Thomson and Alexander Beatty Sharp, Jr.* (Rutland, Vt.: Tuttle Publishing Company, Inc., 1940), 263, 264; George S. Porter, “English Ancestry of William Briscoe of Boston, Mass., in 1639,” typescript, 4 pp. (n. d.) [FSL film 1,015,840, item 15] (microfilmed 1977).

<sup>18</sup> Walter C. Metcalfe, ed., *The Visitations of Hertfordshire, Made by Robert Cooke, Esq., Clarencieux, in 1572, and Sir Richard St. George, Kt., Clarencieux, in 1634, with Hertfordshire Pedigrees from Harleian MSS. 6147 and 1546*, Publications of the Harleian Society, vol. 22 (London: The Society, 1886), 31. The father of the armiger of 1634 is identified with Orgar Hall in his memorial brass: Sir Henry Chauncy, *The Historical Antiquities of Hertfordshire . . .* 2 vols. (London: Printed for Ben. Griffin, 1700; reprint, Bishops Stortford: J. M. Mullinger, 1826), 2:369–370. He and Robert are both named as sons in the will of Edward Briscoe, 1589, who also named both Aldenham Wood as his own residence and Orgar Hall as his son Edward's residence: Register Drury, 56, Prerogative Court of Canterbury, PROB/11/76/121, The National Archives, Kew, Surrey, England (“England & Wales, Prerogative Court of Canterbury Wills, 1384–1858,” *Ancestry.com*). However, the wife named in this will is *Johane*, whereas the brass identifies Edward of Orgar Hall as the “only Son and Heir” of Edward of Aldenham Wood and his first wife *Helen*. *Johane* is therefore presumed not to be the first wife of the testator, but possibly Robert's mother. *The Victoria History of the County of Hertfordshire*, vol. 2, William Page, ed. (London: Archibald Constable and Company, Ltd., 1908), 156–157, suggests that Orgar Hall was held in 1608 as a parcel of the manor of Newberries in the same parish, though others held the manor as late as 1620.

to have taken up lands at Aldenham by Hilary term, 32 Henry VIII [1540/1], when Edward Brysco secured his title through a final concord with Nicholas Platt and Thomasine his wife.<sup>[19]</sup> This Edward's son Edward apparently came of age by 1545, when "Edward Brystoo, g[ent].," was charged 20 shillings for Tytburst, and "Edward Bristoo, jun.," was charged 16 pence for Aldenham, in the subsidy roll.<sup>[20]</sup> The elder Edward was buried in the Aldenham church, according to the will of his son John, which directed "my bodye to be buried in the churche of st John Baptist in Aldenham so nere to my deere father Edward Brisco as conveniently as it maye be," but Edward's burial does not appear in the parish register, which begins in January 1559/60.<sup>[21]</sup>

A nineteenth-century publication based on a contemporary copy of the 1615 Visitation of Cumberland identifies this last Edward as the son of Edward Brisko of Westward in that county, a cadet of the feudal lords of Crofton. Another son of this Edward was Guy Brisko of Westward, father of *Edward Brisko of Croft Cannonby*, whose sons were *Guy* and *Richard*.<sup>[22]</sup> Without marks of cadency, the family arms were *Argent three greyhounds courant in pale Sable*.<sup>[23]</sup> Assuming that this last Guy was the testator of 1594, Alexander and Edward of Aldenham Wood would be his first cousins once removed. "Mr. Alexander Briscoe" was buried at Aldenham, 15 November 1623.<sup>[24]</sup> However, Edward of Aldenham Wood had died in 1590, and this leaves his sons, Edward of Orgar Hall and Robert—Guy's second cousins—as the most likely candidates for the other two "loving cousins" in Guy's will.<sup>[25]</sup> Edward and Robert both died testate, and Edward also left both a burial entry and a memorial brass that names his parents.<sup>[26]</sup>

---

<sup>19</sup> "Feet of Fines for Hertfordshire: Tudor Period," *Herts Genealogist and Antiquary* 1 (1895): 150.

<sup>20</sup> "Subsidy Rolls for Hertfordshire," *Herts Genealogist and Antiquary* 2 (1897): 28 (gent.), 350 (jun.).

<sup>21</sup> Register Rutland, 59, Prerogative Court of Canterbury, PROB/11/72/760 (dated 15 May 1588, probated 10 Oct. 1588); Kenneth F. Gibbs, transcr., *The Parish Registers of Aldenham, Hertfordshire, 1559–1659*, William Brigg, ed. (St. Albans: Privately printed, 1902), 103.

<sup>22</sup> John Fetherston, ed., *The Visitation of the County of Cumberland in the Year 1615, Taken by Richard St. George, Norroy King of Arms*, Publications of the Harleian Society, vol. 7 (London: Published by the society, 1872), 11.

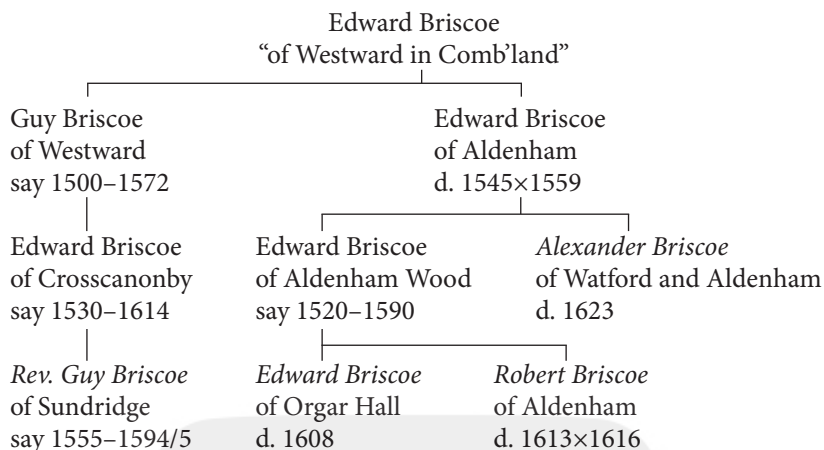
<sup>23</sup> F. J. Field, *An Armorial for Cumberland*, Cumberland and Westmorland Antiquarian and Archæological Society, Publications, Extra Series, vol. 18 (Kendal: Titus Wilson & Son, 1937), 96.

<sup>24</sup> Gibbs, *Parish Registers of Aldenham* [note 21], 137.

<sup>25</sup> His will is in Register Drury, 56, Prerogative Court of Canterbury, PROB 11/76/121. For his burial as "Edward Briscoe se' de Alde'h'm wood," 6 July 1590, see Gibbs, *Parish Registers of Aldenham* [note 21], 117.

<sup>26</sup> Edward's will is in Register Windebanck, 41, Prerogative Court of Canterbury, PROB/11/111/366; his burial, as Mr. Edward Bryscoe of Tibhurstreat, 16 April 1608, Gibbs, *Parish Registers of Aldenham* [note 21], 128; brass, Chauncy, *Historical Antiquities of Hertfordshire* [note 18], 2:369–370. Robert's will, dated 2 Oct. 1613 and probated 26 Aug. 1616, is in Register Cope, 78, Prerogative Court of Canterbury, PROB/11/128/220. His principal heir was Edward Brisco, the son and heir of his late brother Edward, but he also made bequests to various cousins, including "unto William Brisco sonne of Gye Brisco the some of three pounds sixe shillings."

## Rev. Guy Briscoe and His “Loving Cousins”



Behind Edward Brisko of Westward, the Visitation pedigree claims seven further generations of ancestors in the male line: Robert<sup>E</sup>, Christopher<sup>F</sup>, Isold<sup>G</sup>, Robert<sup>H</sup>, Jordan<sup>I</sup>, Allan<sup>J</sup>, and Robert<sup>K</sup>.<sup>[27]</sup> Unfortunately, men bearing those names go largely unrecorded in the printed calendars of medieval records held by the Public Record Office—now The National Archives.<sup>[28]</sup> Corroborating records have been found, however, for both Guy Briscoe of Westward and his son Edward Briscoe of Crosscanonby. In particular, Guy’s will of 1572 names the same three sons as the Visitation, as well as one of his namesake grandsons: the son of his son Anthony.<sup>[29]</sup> If the testator was the grandfather of Rev. Guy Briscoe of Sundridge, who might have married for the first time in 1579, then the testator himself might have been born about 1500. We consequently treat the testator as the earliest verified ancestor of the Kentish branch of the family (see Genealogical Summary). The existence of Edward, his father, might be admitted on the grounds that the 1615 pedigree was compiled in the lifetime of a grandson, Alexander Briscoe of Watford and Aldenham. Further analysis of the pedigree’s earlier chronology will be found in an appendix to this article.

Once parish registers begin, the armigerous family in Hertfordshire is recorded mainly at Aldenham. Its early registers were printed more than a century ago. The Brisco(e) entries at Watford, by contrast, appear to relate mostly to William<sup>I</sup> Briscoe, later of Boston, Massachusetts. His wife and all four sons documented in American records are represented here. The presence of cousins nearby—not especially close in kinship, but responsible for his inheritance from his father’s estate—could account for his migration here from Kent.

<sup>27</sup> Fetherston, *Visitation of the County of Cumberland* [note 22], 11.

<sup>28</sup> Mark Briscoe, “Re: Brownes of London,” *soc.genealogy.medieval*, 18 May 2001 (groups.google.com/g/soc.genealogy.medieval/c/jbF6v2xceSU?pli=1).

<sup>29</sup> Consistory Court, Diocese of Carlisle, Probate Records, 1572 [FSL DGS 8,036,939].

*St. Mary, Watford, parish register, 1558–1667*<sup>[30]</sup>

## Baptisms

1617	Nov.	thomas Son of Witm brisco the 16
1619	Oct.	Daniel son of W <sup>m</sup> Brisco and Jane his wife 20 <sup>th</sup>
1621	April	Nathaniel, sonn of W <sup>m</sup> Briscoe and Jane his wife. 8
1621	Sept.	Mary, daughter of Gawin Brisco and Mary his wife—11
1622	Oct.	John, Son of Williã Brischoe & Jane his wife—27
1624	Oct.	William, sonne of W <sup>m</sup> . & Jane Brisco—24
1625/6	March	Elizabeth, daughter of W <sup>m</sup> & Jane Briscoe—5
1627	Aug.	Joseph, Sonne of William and Jane Briscoe—19
1629	April	Beniamin, sonne of William and Jane Briscoe—10
1631/2	Feb.	Lidia daughter of William and Jane Brisco—26
1639	April	Ezekiell sonne of Willyam & Sislee Bisco—16

## Marriages

1603	June	George Winckfeild & Mary brisco, 5 <sup>[31]</sup>
1637	Aug.	William Brisco & Ciclye Deale—17

## Burials

1576/7	Jan.	Richard sonne of M <sup>f</sup> Briscoe of Lond 7
1605	Dec.	the son of mrtris [?] brisco: the 5
1630	June	An infant of William Briscoe—19
1630	June	A child of William Briscoe—21
1637	May	Jane y <sup>e</sup> . wife of William Bisco—3
1637/8	Feb.	John y <sup>e</sup> sonne of William Bisco—1:
1638	April	[faded] Bisco—25

The latest event in this series, Ezekiel's baptism in April 1639, is especially helpful on two fronts. First, it is consistent with his identification in the 1662 deed as William's youngest son. Second, the family must have taken passage to Boston within the year—apparently within weeks after Ezekiel was born—to arrive there before the closing of the 1639 sailing season. For immigrants who do not appear in any known passenger list, such a specific dating of their transatlantic passage is uncommon.<sup>[32]</sup>

<sup>30</sup> St. Mary's Church, Watford, Hertfordshire, baptisms, marriages and burials [FSL film 991,355]; also, "Hertfordshire, Parish Registers Browse, 1538–1988," *Findmypast.com*.

<sup>31</sup> The bride was the daughter of Alexander and Margery (Baldwyn) Briscoe of Watford, and the niece of Edward of Aldenham Wood. Metcalfe, *Visitations of Hertfordshire* [note 18], 31; her baptism, 28 Oct. 1582, in Gibbs, *Parish Registers of Aldenham* [note 21], 16.

<sup>32</sup> This last observation was made by Robert Charles Anderson.

## The Rev. Guy Briscoe and His Family in Kent

Guy Briscoe was admitted a tabarder of Queen's College, Oxford, 1568–1569. His age was not recorded. He earned a B.A., 9 July 1569, and an M.A., 18 June 1572, at which point he also was made a fellow.<sup>[33]</sup> He was rector of St. Margaret's, High Halstow, Kent, in 1577, and of St. Mary's, Sundridge, in 1583.<sup>[34]</sup> Parish registers do not begin in High Halstow until 1653, but there is a register from Sundridge during Guy's tenure there.<sup>[35]</sup>

### Baptisms

- 1583 Ann, y<sup>e</sup> daug<sup>r</sup>. of Guy Briscow, y<sup>e</sup> same day [15 Sept.]
- 1585 Ann, y<sup>e</sup> daug<sup>r</sup>. of Guy Briscow, May 20
- 1586 Thomas y<sup>e</sup> sonn of Guy Briscow, Aug. 21
- 1587 Isabell y<sup>e</sup> daug<sup>r</sup>. of Guy Briscow, Nov<sup>r</sup>. 29
- 1589 Edward, y<sup>e</sup> sonn of Guy Briscow, May 4
- 1591 Williã, y<sup>e</sup> sonn of Guy Briscow, June 29
- 1592 John, y<sup>e</sup> sonn of Guy Briscow, y<sup>e</sup> same day [3 Sept.]
- 1594 Guy, y<sup>e</sup> sonn of Guy Briscow, Aug. 4

### Burials

- 1583 Ann y<sup>e</sup> daug<sup>r</sup>. of Guy Briscow, Oct. 22
- 1583 Elizabeth, y<sup>e</sup> daug<sup>r</sup>. of Guy Briscow, Oct. 24
- 1594/5 Guy Briscow, was buried Feb. 28

Edmund Grindal, Archbishop of Canterbury, died 6 July 1583, two months before Guy's first appearance in the Sundridge parish register. At this point, William Wilson had served as one of Grindal's chaplains for at least five years. William also held the rectory of Cliffe, Kent, a living in the gift of the Archbishop of Canterbury, from 1578. William's duties to higher church officials, along with his responsibilities for other benefices, discharged him from the day-to-day pastoral care of the congregation.<sup>[36]</sup>

Guy evidently was not an absentee rector. The sacraments administered to Guy and his children from 1583 to 1594/5 were performed in his own parish. It does appear, however, that Guy must have married into the Wilson family during William's time as Grindal's chaplain. Guy identified his wife as a member of the Wilson family in his will, and there is no record at Sundridge of either another marriage to Guy or a previous wife who was buried as early as 1583.

<sup>33</sup> Joseph Foster, *Alumni Oxonienses: The Members of the University of Oxford, 1500–1714*, Early Ser., 4 vols. (Oxford: James Parker & Co., 1891–1892), 1:183.

<sup>34</sup> C. H. Fielding, *The Records of Rochester* (Dartford, Eng.: Snowden Brothers, West Kent Printing Works, 1920), 141, 142, 272, 273, 344.

<sup>35</sup> Sundridge, St. Mary, Baptisms, Marriages & Burials, 1562–1655, "Kent County Council, Parish Register Browse," *Findmypast.com*.

<sup>36</sup> Anderson, *Puritan Pedigrees* [note 13], 147, 149, 150; Fielding, *Records of Rochester* [note 34], 62, 63.

An abstract of Guy's will, as noted above, has long been in print. What follows is a complete transcript:<sup>[37]</sup>

In the name of God amen the sixe and twentithe Daye of Maye in the sixe and thirtith yere of the Raigne of our soveraigne Ladie Elizabeth by the grace of god of England France and Ireland Quene Defender of the faith &c. Anno Domine a thousand fyve hundred nynetie fower I Guy Briscowe of the parishe of Sundriche in the Countie of Kent clerke beyng of sounde and perfect memorye Do make thys my last will and testament in manner and forme folowinge First I commend my soule into the handes of god my Father thorough the mediation of Jesus Christe my only and sole Redemer and savyour and my bodie to be layed in xpian [Christian] buryall at the Discretion of my executrix And as touching my worldlie goodes I give and bequeathe to the poore of Sundriche thirtie shillings to be Distributed at the discrecion of mine Executrix and of the churchwardens of Sundriche for the tyme beyng. Item I give and bequeathe to my godchilde Lawrence Gascony three shillings fower pence. Item I give and bequeathe unto all the rest of my godchildren twelve pence a pece. Item I give and bequeathe to my loving father Edward Briscowe of Crosceanby in the Countie of Cumberland yf he be livinge tenne shillings. Item I give and bequeathe to my sister Margaret in the sayed Countie of Comberland yf she be livinge tenne shillings. Item I give and bequeathe to my sister in lawe Mistris Isabell Willson tenne shillings. Item I give and bequeath to my Daughter Mary Briscowe three score poundes and my second featherbed five payer [pair] of good sheets a paire of the second blanketts the second Bedcovering the second Bolster twoe of the second pillowes and the second Curtens and the second Bedsteadle twoe chestes wherof the one to be at her owne choise, the second brasse pott the second panne halfe a dozen of platters or pewterdishes fower pewter porrengers. Item I give and bequeathe to my Daughter Anne Briscowe Fiftie poundes. [*Inserted from margin:* Item I give and bequeathe to my daughter Isabell Briscoe Fiftie poundes] to be payed to every of my sayed daughters at their severall ages of twentie yeres or at their severall dayes of mariage which shall first happen so that none of them marrye before the age of eighteene yeres for in that case my will and mynde ys that none of them so marryng before the age of eighteene yeres shall have her or their portion or portions before she or they accomlishe the age of eighteene yeres. Item, my will and mynde ys that yf any of my saied Daughters do departe out of this naturall life [*interlined:* either] before the Daye of their said severall mariages or before their severall ages of twentie yeres which shall first happen then the portion or portions of my saied daughter or Daughters so departinge shalbe equallie Devided amongst the rest of my children as well sonnes as Daughters then livinge to be paied at their severall ages of twentie yeres as ys before expressed. Item I give and bequeathe to my eldest sonne Thomas Briscowe fortie poundes: And further I give and bequeathe unto hym my sayed sonne (yf it fall out that my wife or Overseer or overseers of this my last will hereafter by me named and appoynted or any of them may lawfully sell all my lande and tenements with thappurt[en]unces according to this my last will and testament) other fortie poundes. Item I give and bequeathe to my second sonne Edward Briscowe fiftie poundes. Item I give and bequeathe to my third sonne William Briscowe fiftie poundes. Item I give and bequeathe to my fowrthe sonne John Briscowe fiftie poundes. Item I give and bequeathe to the childe my wife nowe goeth withall fiftie poundes. All which severall

<sup>37</sup> Register Scott, 20, Prerogative Court of Canterbury, PROB/11/85/185.

legaceys by me bequeathed to my sayed sonnes I will shalbe payed to them at their severall ages of one and twentie yerres: And yf yt happen any of my sayed sonnes to dye before their severall ages of one and twentie yerres Then my will ys the portion or portions of hym or them so Dying shalbe equallie Devided amonge the rest of my sonnes and Daughters then living. Item I give and bequeathe to eache of my houshold servanntes for the tyme beyng twoe shillings sixe pence. Item I give and bequeathe unto my loving wife Mary Briscowe Daughter of William Willson late of Newe Windsor in the Countye of Barkes Deceased her heires and assignes for ever all my landes and tenements with their appurt[en]unces whatsoever within this Realme of England to the only intent and purpose that she my sayed wife shall sell the same by the advise of my overseer or overseers of this, my last will and testam<sup>t</sup> hereafter named for the payment of the sayed Legaceys and of my sayed childrens portions. And in case my sayed wife do die before my sayed Landes be sould and my sayed legaceys and portions payed: Then I will my sayed bequests to be voide utterlie touching my landes to my sayed wife and her heires: And then I will that all my saied landes and tenements, with their appurt[en]unces whatsoever within this realme of England shalbe sould by my loving brother in lawe William Willson Clerke to the onlie entent and purpose that he, my sayed brother in lawe shall with the same paye the saied legaceys and my sayed childrens portions. And in case any money remayne upon the sale of the saied landes (the sayed legaceys and childrens portions beyng payed) my will ys that shalbe equallie Devided amonge my children then living. And in case my saied brother in lawe Do happen to die before my sayed Land be sould and the sayed Legaceys and childrens portions beyng payed Then I will that all my sayed Landes and tenements with their appurt[en]unces whatsoever within this Realme of England shalbe sould by my loving cosen Alexander Briscowe of the parishe of Wattford besides Aldenham in the Countie of Hartford to the only entent and purpose that he my sayed cosen shall with the same paye the sayed Legaceys and my sayed Childrens portions: And in case any money remayne upon the sale of the sayed Landes (the sayed legaceys and childrens portions beyng payed) my will ys that shalbe equallie Devided amonge my children then livinge And in case my saied cosen Alexander do die before my sayed Landes be sould and the sayed Legaceys and childrens portions payed Then I will that all my sayed Landes and tenements with their appurten[an]ces whatsoever shalbe sould by my loving cosins Edward and Robert Briscowe of the parishe of Aldnam aforesayed or the Survivor of them, to the only intent and purpose the sayed Edward and Robert or the Survivor of them shall with the same paye the sayed Legaceys and my saied childrens portions (the sayed Legaceys and my sayed childrens portions beyng payed) my will ys that the residue of the money growing by the sale of the the sayed landes shalbe equallie Devided amonge my children then living at their severall ages as before ys mencyoned. And further my will and mynde ys that in case my sayed wife do marry agayne before all my sayed Legaceys and childrens portions be payed she shall put in good and sufficient securitie to my sayed Brother in law William Wilson yf he be then livinge or otherwise to my sayed cosens Alexander Edward and Robert Briscowe or the Survivor or Survivors of them for payment of so muche of the sayed Legaceys and my saied childrens portions as then shalbe unpaid. And for performaunce hereof and for the bringing up of my children at her chardge my will ys that my sayed wife at the proving of this my last will and testament shall enter into bond of eighte hundred poundes unto the Judge or Ordinary before whome this my last will shalbe proved. All the rest of my goodes as well moveable as unmoveable whatsoever (my debtes



and Funerall discharged and my legaceys and childrens portions payed) I give and bequeathe to my loving wife Marye Briscowe Daughter to William Willson late of Newe Windsor in the Countie of Barkeshire aforesaid Deceased whome I make constitute and ordeyne my sole executrix of this my last will and testament. Item I make constitute and ordayne overseer of this my last will and testament my sayed loving brother in lawe ~~William~~ William Wilson clerke, to whom I give for his paynes herein tenne shillings. And after his Decease I appoynt ov'seers my loving cosens Alexander Edward and Robert Briscowe and for their paynes therein I give to every of them tenne shillings a peece. Item I nominate, constitute and appoynte my sayed brother in law ~~William~~ William Willson clerke governour and gardiner of my sayed daughter Mary Briscowe untill she be twentie yeres of age or till her daye of marriage, which shall first happen. And in case my said brother in lawe do happen to dye before the sayed age of twentie yeres or daye of marriage Then and in that case I nominate constitute and appoynte my said cosens Alexander Edward and Robert Briscowe or the Survivor of them governoures and gardynors of my sayed Daughter as ys aforesayed. Item I revoke all former willes and testaments heretofore by me made: In Witnesse of all the premises I have subscribed my name with my owne hand and put to my seale to every leafe and openlie pronounced and declared the same to be my last will and testament the Daye and yere abovewritten. In the presence and witnesse of John Spratt and Abell Wadsworth, with others.

Guy's widow, Mary, married twice more. Her second marriage was to Martyn Cotes of the city of Rochester, at Cliffe—where her brother William Wilson was rector—on 24 June 1600. The record calls her a widow.<sup>[38]</sup> Martin and Mary lived at Rochester, where Martin Co(a)tes, senior, having served as town clerk and county coroner, died testate. His lengthy will, dated 10–13 May 1604, was probated 9 July 1605. It bears more hints of puritan belief and practice than Guy's will, beginning with Martin's commendation of his soul “into thands of the omnipotent and Allmightye God my creator unto to Jesus xpt [Christ] my redeemr and unto the holly goast the sanctifyer of me & ye be ellect pol people of god.”<sup>[39]</sup> Its Calvinistic cast is signified less by its trinitarian frame than its endorsement of sanctification through election.<sup>[40]</sup>

Martin requested “to be buryed neare to my late wiffes sepulcher in the north Ile of the cathedral church of in Rochester yf it shall so please mr Deane and the prbends for the tyme beinge otherwise where it shall please God to dyrect myne executors & ovrsers.”<sup>[41]</sup> His principal legatees consisted of his present wife Mary, and a minor daughter also named Mary. Martin bequeathed his wife £10 yearly, and the right to occupy his mansion house in Rochester. He devised all his land to his daughter, “except it please God my Wife be wth

<sup>38</sup> Cliffe at Hoo, St. Helen Parish Records, Composite Register, 1558–1654, P94/1/4, Medway Archives, Chatham, Kent, PDF, image 73 of 117 (catalog entry, [cityark.medway.gov.uk/Details/archive/110002509](http://cityark.medway.gov.uk/Details/archive/110002509)). Parishes with records in this collection were constituents of the Archdeaconry of Rochester.

<sup>39</sup> Probate Records for the Archdeaconry of Rochester and the Episcopal Consistory Court, Registered Wills, 19:1:469–474 [FSL DGS 8,047,548], at 470 recto. Sacramental records of the cathedral church do not survive prior to 1657, nor any other parish records in the town prior to 1624.

<sup>40</sup> Anderson, *Puritan Pedigrees* [note 13], 5, 22.

<sup>41</sup> Archdeaconry of Rochester, Registered Wills, 19:470 verso.

Chyld wch then shall be equally Devided betweene them as well in goods as lands.”<sup>[42]</sup> Evidently Martin’s wife was still of childbearing age in 1604.

The means by which Martin provided for his daughter’s spiritual estate is also distinctive. In addition to his great Bible, he left her his law books, property records, and “all such englishe books notes of sermons & other records as be & may be meete for hir remembraunce of me.”<sup>[43]</sup> Once again, the organization of religious exercises around sermons, rather than formulaic prayers, and the study and discussion of sermons in private meetings, had long been foci of puritan reform efforts.<sup>[44]</sup> Martin evinced special concern that his daughter “be godly and virtuously brought upp untill above twentye yeeres of hir Age.”<sup>[45]</sup> *Godly* was a favored descriptor among adherents to the reform movement. They applied it both to themselves and their communities—in contrast to *puritan* itself, which the movement’s opponents used as a pejorative.<sup>[46]</sup>

The clearest sign of Martin’s connection with the Wilson family lies in his choice of executors and overseers. As executors, Martin appointed his wife and his “brother Wilson.” The latter was also appointed an overseer, along with Mr. John Readye, clerk, and “my cosin” Mr. Thomas Lee, Esquire, each to receive ten shillings. Immediately after appointing the executors, Martin issued a further charge to “my sayd brother m<sup>r</sup> William Willson m<sup>r</sup> John Ready & my sayd cosin m<sup>r</sup> Thomas Lee” to take possession of his land for the performance of the will. It is the only place in the will where Martin fully identifies his brother-in-law by name and quality.<sup>[47]</sup>

Martin made limited bequests to his stepchildren without naming them. He left them 20 shillings apiece, to be paid within a year after his wife’s death,<sup>[48]</sup> and allowed them to live in his mansion house, provided that they remained unmarried.<sup>[49]</sup> He willed personal items “to m<sup>r</sup> William Collins my wiffes sonne in Lawe,” consisting of his best cloak, a Bible, and most of the books in his study.<sup>[50]</sup> As above noticed, Martin reserved other books and papers to his daughter. Other legatees included his brother Alexander Coates; “cosin” Ann Coates, Alexander’s daughter; sister Jane Horne and sister Kenne, in the event that his child or children died without issue; the widow of his brother Coates; “cosin” Martin Coates; the latter’s son, a godson of the testator; other godsons Martin Christmas (20 shillings yearly for the “relevinge” of his mother, sister, and brother, all unnamed) and Martin Norris; a certain “mother Cooke,” who had attended the testator’s first wife during her sickness; and other cousins,

<sup>42</sup> Archdeaconry of Rochester, Registered Wills, 19:471 recto–471 verso.

<sup>43</sup> Archdeaconry of Rochester, Registered Wills, 19:473 recto–473 verso.

<sup>44</sup> Anderson, *Puritan Pedigrees* [note 13], 16–18.

<sup>45</sup> Archdeaconry of Rochester, Registered Wills, 19:474 recto.

<sup>46</sup> Anderson, *Puritan Pedigrees* [note 13], 5–6.

<sup>47</sup> Archdeaconry of Rochester, Registered Wills, 19:470 verso–471 recto (overseers), 471 verso (executors). John Ready was rector of St. Margaret’s, Rochester, from 1600 to 1625 (Fielding, *Records of Rochester* [note 34], 234–235). He may be the John Readie who took a B.A., 22 Feb. 1574/5, and an M.A., 13 Mar. 1578/9, at Oxford, and was vicar at Hoo in 1578 (Foster, *Alumni Oxonienses* [note 33], 3:1242). This would make Readie the pastor at Cliffe early in William Wilson’s time as rector of that parish.

<sup>48</sup> Archdeaconry of Rochester, Registered Wills, 19:471 verso.

<sup>49</sup> *Ibid.*, Registered Wills, 19:473 verso.

<sup>50</sup> *Ibid.*, Registered Wills, 19:473 recto.

Briggitt [no surname], Alexander Coats, Richard Coates, Lynch Coates, John Tesdall, John Temple, and William White. Martin made bequests to two more cousins, Elisabeth Absolon and her daughter Margaret, on the condition that Elisabeth repay a debt owed to his wife “& confesse the evill words she spake of my wiffe.” To one Mildred Churchman, apparently his wife’s maidservant, Martin gave 20s after his wife’s death “yf she tarry out her yeeres and please my wiffe.”<sup>[51]</sup> To a cousin named Martin, who had once been the testator’s servant and might be the same cousin Martin Coates named elsewhere in the will, he left certain books and papers not reserved to his daughter or his stepson-in-law.<sup>[52]</sup> Lastly, the testator designated another cousin, John Somer, to serve as a collector of revenues for certain of his daughter Mary’s lands during her minority.<sup>[53]</sup>

Mary Wilson’s third husband was William Betts, gentleman, of Wouldham, Kent. As “Maria uxor M<sup>r</sup>. Willielmi Bets,” her burial was recorded there, 19 February 1612/3<sup>[54]</sup>—even though, as we will soon see, she had also requested burial at Rochester Cathedral. Soon after, on 10 August 1613, William Collins, clerk and prebendary of Rochester Cathedral, gave a bond of £160 to Stephen Theobald, Esq., of Seal. The main purpose of this instrument was to confirm Theobald in certain lands called the Reede, in the parish of Kemsing, by Collins’s grant of the same date. The list of remainders, however, suggests that the Reede had been a Wilson family property. In addition to the dower of Collins’s wife, Margaret, the bond secured Theobald against

other incumbrances, including claims by the heirs of Guy Brisco, clerk, dec’d., William Wilson, D.D., and his heirs, William Meaker, gent., and his heirs, William Betts, gent., and his heirs, and the heirs and assigns of Mary Betts, dec’d., his late wife, and formerly wife of said Guy Brisco.<sup>[55]</sup>

Unfortunately, no relationship between William Meaker, gent., and the Wilson family is firmly established, and Meaker appears not to have died testate in Kent.

“M<sup>r</sup>. Willielmus Betts fidus Rectoris amicus” was buried at Wouldham, 26 October 1614.<sup>[56]</sup> He and Mary both died testate. When the registered copy of Mary’s will was microfilmed, and later digitized, the words flush against the binding on the folio versos were wholly or partially obscured, and not all of the missing words may now be inferred by context. Nevertheless, she names her surviving children—including one minor “daughter,” Mary Coates, who might actually be a stepchild—as well as her surviving husband, and she alludes to her land in Kemsing. Once again we present a complete transcript.<sup>[57]</sup>

<sup>51</sup> Ibid., Registered Wills, 19:471 verso–472 verso.

<sup>52</sup> Ibid., Registered Wills, 19:473 recto.

<sup>53</sup> Ibid., Registered Wills, 19:473 verso.

<sup>54</sup> Wouldham, All Saints Parish Records, Composite Register, 1538–1721, P405/1/1, Medway Archives, PDF, image 18 of 25 (catalog entry, [cityark.medway.gov.uk/Details/archive/110010373](http://cityark.medway.gov.uk/Details/archive/110010373)).

<sup>55</sup> John M. L. Booker, ed., *The Wiston Archives: A Catalogue*, vol. 1 (Chichester, England: West Sussex County Council, 1975), 357–358.

<sup>56</sup> Wouldham, All Saints Parish Registers, Composite Register [note 54], image 18 of 25.

<sup>57</sup> Probate Records for the Archdeaconry of Rochester and the Episcopal Consistory Court, Registered Wills, 20:357–358 [FSL DGS 8,047,542].

In the name of God Amen. I Marye Betts of the p[ar]ish of Woldham in the County of Kent being well in mynd (prayed be the lord) though sick in body, do make and ordayne (revoking all other wills and testaments formerly by me made) this my last will and testament, in manner and forme following. First I bequeath my soule unto Almighty god who gave it me, and my body to be buried in the Cathedrall Church of Rochester by my brother Wilsons Children. And as for those temporall goods w<sup>ch</sup> god hath lent me my very will is this, First I give unto Grace Collins my Grandchild twenty pounds to be payed unto her at the age of twenty yeres or at her day of marriage w<sup>ch</sup> shall first happen. Next I give unto my Daughter Caves two children Martine and Anne Cave fyve pounds a peece, to be p[ai]d unto them at the age of twenty yeares or their dayes of maryage w<sup>ch</sup> shall first happen, in the meane while my will is that it shalbe put forth for their best advantage, w<sup>ch</sup> I intreate my brother Wilson to see p[er]formed, and if one dye before the other my will is that the survivo<sup>r</sup> shall have the whole wch the whole advantage, yf both die, that [lost] shalbe divided equally betwixt the child[lost] w<sup>ch</sup> shall or may hereafter Be bornd of [lost] Body of my foresayd Daughter Isabell Next I give unto my Daughter Ma[ry] Coats the lease of the house at Sh[lost] During her life, and afterwards to m[y son] Guido Briscowe, and after his life e[lost] to my sonne W[il]m Briscowe. Itm [lost] unto my sonne John twenty pounds [lost] paied unto him at the age of one & tw[enty] conditionally that he have not before willfully wasted that porcon w<sup>ch</sup> s[ai]d [lost] receive by vertue of his fathers w[ill.] Itm I give unto my sonne Guido Fif[lost] pounds to be paied at the age of fyv[e and] twenty yeres. Itm I give unto my s[on] William Fortie pounds to be paid un[t o him] at the age of fyve and twenty yeres, and [if] it so please god that any of these my s[ai]d sonnes doe die before they be of the a[ge to] receive the foresayd porcons bequeath[ed] unto them, then my will is that that p[ortion] shalbe Divided equally betweene the survivo<sup>s</sup> and paied unto them at that ty[me] wherein it should have bine Due to the De[lost] Provided that my sonne John be not on[e of] the twoe w<sup>ch</sup> survive, for then my will is that he have nothing unlesse that he can make prooffe that he have not wilfully wasted his porcon due by his father as aforesayd, and be it <sup>n</sup>[that] one of the two last survivors dye before he come to the age above mentioned then the last shall have all. Itm I give moreover unto my Daught<sup>r</sup> Marye Coats fyve pounds to be paide at the age of twenty yeres or day of marriage w<sup>ch</sup> shall first happen. Itm I give unto Mary Hodges the wife of W[il]m Hodges ten shillings Prudence Gaseneye [*Gascony?*] twenty shillings, W[il]m Fennor twenty shillings to Marget Wilson tenn shillings. Itm I give to my Daughter Marye Coats the Drawing table in the plo<sup>a</sup> [?] at Rochester, I give also unto her my silver Beaker paying unto her brother John Thirty shillings at the age of one and Twenty yeres. Nowe concerninge my lands in the p[ar]ishe of Kemsinge my will and testament is this, I give unto my sonne Edward and his heires all these lands in Kemsing aforesayd, conditionally that he paye all the aforesayd legacies, w<sup>ch</sup> if he s[hall] refuse to doe, then my will is that my [lost] Wilson shall have these lands and make [sale?] of them w<sup>th</sup> the best advantage, and [lost] devide the whole equally Betwixt h[lost] sayd Children and my foresayed sonnes exc[ept] only my sonne John whome I will to ha[ve] only twenty pounds upon condition af[oresaid] And of this my will and testament I ma[ke] overseers my Husband W[il]m Bets and brother Wilson and to eyther of them I [lost] tenn shillings a peece, And also to m<sup>r</sup> Ca[cot?]<sup>[58]</sup> or who else

<sup>58</sup> Francis Cacott matriculated a pensioner at Corpus Christi College, Cambridge, ca. 1593, and took a B.A., 1597–1598, and an M.A., 1601. He served as rector of All Saints, Wouldham, from 1607 to 1656. Fielding, *Records of Rochester* [note 34], 298–299; John Venn and J. A. Venn, comps.,

preacheth at my buriall te[*lost*] shillings, and in witness hereof I have [set] my hand and seale the second day of Jan[uary] in the yere of o[u]<sup>r</sup> Lord. 1613: Signed and sealed in the p[re]sence of Frauncis Cacot [*lost*] m'ke [mark] of William Field. [Probated 2 April, year lost, but apparently 1613.]

As for William Betts, his will was dated 27 May 1611 and probated 9 February 1614[/5]. It makes his son William his principal heir and executor, but allows his wife Mary £10 per year in two annual installments, to be paid at the feasts of St. Michael and of the Virgin Mary.<sup>[59]</sup> Mary evidently had not been his first wife, and in any case his bequest to her was mooted when she predeceased him.

Guy Briscoe, vintner, the youngest son of Guy and Mary (Wilson) Briscoe, died in September 1625 in St. Nicholas parish, Rochester. He left a brief will, dated 17 September 1625 and probated *ult.* [30<sup>th</sup>] of the same month. His legatees included his brothers, Edward, John, and William Briscoe; a “Coson” Daniell Briscoe, the son of his brother William; sister Mary Hoges, wife of William Hoges; Anthony Allen of Rochester, his wife Dorothy, and their son Anthony; Francis Paule and Martin Cotes Junior, each £0–6–4 “for a remembrance of my Soul”; William Cobden; and, as residuary legatee, sister Izabell Cave, wife of Thomas Cave. Guy made Anthony Allen, “my welbeloved freind,” his executor.<sup>[60]</sup>

The principal in the August 1613 bond, William Collins, prebendary of Rochester Cathedral, was named as “cousin Collins” in the will of Rev. William<sup>A</sup> Wilson. This has produced some speculation that Wilson’s unidentified mother might have belonged to a Collins family.<sup>[61]</sup> However, “cousin” was used more loosely than other kinship terms. It would appear, from the identification of Collins as Mary Wilson’s son-in-law in the will of her second husband, that Wilson actually recognized Collins as a nephew by marriage, and the father of Mary’s granddaughter Grace Collins. Among the daughters named in Rev. Guy’s will, the only candidate for Grace’s mother would seem to be Ann, who was baptized in 1585 but is not directly named in the will of either Mary Betts or Guy Briscoe the vintner. The younger Guy named Mary, wife of William Hodges, as a sister, and Mary Betts left Mary Hodges a small bequest but did not call her a daughter.

William Collins is believed to be the man who matriculated as “pleb.” from Oxfordshire, 9 Dec. 1586, aged 20, and took a B.A. from St. Edmund Hall, Oxford, 24 March 1590/1.<sup>[62]</sup> This would make him a generation younger than William Wilson, who graduated at Merton College, Oxford, in

*Alumni Cantabrigienses: A Biographical List of All Known Students, Graduates and Holders of Office at the University of Cambridge, from the Earliest Times to 1900*, Part I, vol. I (Cambridge: University Press, 1922), 279.

<sup>59</sup> Register Rudd, 20, Prerogative Court of Canterbury, PROB 11/125/141.

<sup>60</sup> Archdeaconry of Rochester, Registered Wills [note 57], 21:152 [FSL DGS 8,047,543].

<sup>61</sup> John Brooks Threlfall, “An Extension of the Sheafe Ancestry,” *Register* 137 (1983):296; John Brooks Threlfall, *The Ancestry of Reverend Henry Whitfield (1590–1657) and His Wife Dorothy Sheafe (159?–1669) of Guilford, Connecticut* (Madison, Wisc.: J. B. Threlfall, 1989), 51, 95.

<sup>62</sup> Foster, *Alumni Oxonienses* [note 33], 1:310.

1564.<sup>[63]</sup> Collins was ordained a deacon and appointed master of the parish school at Hollingbourne, Kent, in 1599. In 1605, he was appointed rector at East Barming, Kent, and served there until he was installed in the fifth prebend of Rochester Cathedral by the bishop of that diocese in 1612.<sup>[64]</sup> Unfortunately he has no entries in the parish register of Hollingbourne, and his only entry at Barming does not clearly relate to his daughter Grace or her mother: “Marie the Daughter of Williame Collens was baptized the xvth of Novemb 1606.”<sup>[65]</sup> Collins died in 1615, testate, but the registered copy of his will has long been lost.<sup>[66]</sup> Wilson, his “cousin,” had been installed in the third prebend of the same cathedral since 1587.<sup>[67]</sup>

## Genealogical Summary

1. **GUY<sup>C</sup> BRISCOE** of Westward, Cumberland, was born say 1500, as discussed above. He was reportedly the son and heir of Edward Briscoe of Westward, the third son of an armiger, and the elder brother of Edward Briscoe of Aldenham, whose descendants differenced the arms with a mullet on a crescent—the standard marks of cadency for the second son of a third son.<sup>[68]</sup> Guy died between 15 June 1572 and 2 October 1572, the dates his will was drawn and probated. He married **AGNES** (\_\_\_\_), who is named in his will, but it is not known whether she was the mother of his three sons, who are named both in his will and the 1615 Visitation of Cumberland. On 8 November 1553, Queen Mary granted Guy Brisco the office of a forester of Westward forest for life, in place of John Foxe, deceased. The forest was among the possessions of Henry, late earl of Northumberland.<sup>[69]</sup> A complete transcript of Guy’s will follows:<sup>[70]</sup>

In the name of god Amen the xv<sup>th</sup> Day of June in the yere of our Lord god 1572 I Guydo Bryscoo sycke in bodie but hole of mynde and in good remembraunce prase be unto god make my Last will and testamet in maner and form [*interlined: followinge*] first I gyf my soule unto almightie god the father the sonne and the hollie gost and my bodie to be buried w<sup>th</sup>in the churche yearde of the blissed trinitie w<sup>th</sup>in the west warde w<sup>th</sup> all my mortuaries dewe and accustomed to be paid to the said churche. And also my mynde and will is that my wyfe Agnes shall have her third p[ar]t of my goods and land w<sup>th</sup>out

<sup>63</sup> Ibid., 4:1657; Bartlett, “Ancestry and Descendants of Rev. John Wilson,” *Register* 61:37; Anderson, *Puritan Pedigrees* [note 13], 149.

<sup>64</sup> John Le Neve, *Fasti Ecclesiae Anglicanae, 1541–1857*, vol. 3, Joyce M. Horn, comp. and ed. (London: University of London, Institute of Historical Research, 1974), 67; *Clergy of the Church of England Database*, person ID 2344 (theclergydatabase.org.uk). Fielding, *Records of Rochester* [note 34], 24, 25, 370, gives 1608 as the year of his appointment to East Barming.

<sup>65</sup> Barming, St. Margaret, Baptisms, Marriages & Burials, 1541–1611, image 11 of 13, and Hollingbourne, All Saints, Baptisms, Marriages & Burials, 1556–1799, both in “Kent County Council, Parish Register Browse,” *Findmypast.com*.

<sup>66</sup> Le Neve, *Fasti Ecclesiae Anglicanae* [note 64], 1541–1857, 3:67.

<sup>67</sup> Ibid., 3:64.

<sup>68</sup> Fetherston, *Visitation of the County Cumberland* [note 22], 11; Metcalfe, *Visitations of Hertfordshire* [note 18], 31.

<sup>69</sup> *Calendar of the Patent Rolls, Preserved in the Public Record Office . . . Philip and Mary*, 4 vols. (London: His Majesty’s Stationery Office, 1937–1939), 1:278.

<sup>70</sup> Consistory Court, Diocese of Carlisle, Probate Records, 1572 [FSL DGS 8,036,939].

any truble or vexation of my executors or assignes. It[em] I gyve to Cuthbert Bryscoo my Sonne all my free lande in Wigton to hym, and to the heires males of his bodie lawfullie begotten And in Defaulte of Issewe to my Sonne Anthonie Bryscoo and the heires males of his bodie Lawfullie begotten and in Default of suche Issewe to Edwarde Bryscoo my Sonne And the heires males of his bodie Lawfully begotten And in Defaulte of such Issewe to remane to my ryght heires It[em] I gyve to my Sonnes Edwarde Anthonie and Cuthbert Bryscoo all my goodds moveable and unmoveable my Debts payd, and my legacies gyven, And I maikethem *[interlined: mye]* sole executors of ~~them~~; It[em] I gyve to my Sonne Cuthbert Briscoo my best sylver spone It[em] I gyve to my sonne Anthonie Briscoo a sylver spone It[em] I gyve to Guydo Bryscoo sonne of Anthonie Briscoo a sylver spone It[em] I gyve to Willm Shepperd a younge oxe and a younge mule, It[em] I gyve to Willm Doud a read whye and a younge colte and all his waiges unpaid It[em] I gyve to my Sonne Cuthbert Briscoo my best cheste It[em] I gyve to ~~Ann~~ Guydo Briscoo Sonne of Anthonie Briscoo the mawlt Arke It[em] I gyve to Elyner Barne a gymer lambe, It[em] I gyve to John Barne an ewe and a lambe, It[em] I gyve to Willm Barne a Lambe, It[em] to Richarde Barne a lambe, It[em] to Agnes Shepert a litle Arke It[em] to Alice M<sup>r</sup>ke a lambe, It[em] to M<sup>r</sup>garet Glaisters a lambe It[em] to Alice Wilkinson a lambe, It[em] to Robert Barne a lambe. It[em] to Robert Stolbert clerke ii<sup>o</sup> lambes, And also my mynde and will is that yf my Sonne Edwarde *[interlined: or Any other in his name]* do vex rile or truble my Sonne Anthonie Bryscoo ~~the or any other in his name~~ either for my fermehold [?] or any other thinge, that then my Sonne Edwarde shall neather have legacie or goods of myne *[interlined: or Any p[ar]te thereof]* neither shalbe Any of my executors ~~or have Any p[ar]te thereof~~ witnesses Willm Willoughby John Willoughby—Symond Barne w<sup>th</sup> other mo[?]<sup>?</sup> as John Briscoo gent Richard Barwis gent and mr Hewgh Sewell John Tyffin

Guy's widow, Agnes, could the Annas Brysco, testatrix of Westward, whose will of 2 May 1576 was probated 6 June 1576. She also requested burial in the Westward churchyard. However, she named none of Guy's sons as her own. Instead, her children and legatees were daughters Janat Tompson and Annas Stempens, and a son Phelophe [Philip] Boke, whom she named her sole executor. Another Annas Brysco was bequeathed a lamb. Other legatees of small bequests were Annas Huntynnton, "John Boke Sonne," and Izabell Sand<sup>r</sup>son. The witnesses were Antony Brysko, Wylm. Doud, Janat Wylkinson, and Margaret Wylkinson.<sup>[71]</sup>

Children of Guy<sup>c</sup> Briscoe are:

2.
  - i. EDWARD<sup>B</sup> BRISCOE, b. say 1530.
  - ii. ANTHONY BRISCOE, b. say 1532, apparently died intestate. The inventory of Anthony Briscoe of Westward was taken 3 Jan. 1590[/1].<sup>[72]</sup> He had one son, named in both the Visitation and his father's will:
    1. *Guy Briscoe*, living in 1572.
  - iii. CUTHBERT BRISCOE, b. say 1535, devisee of his father's freehold lands at Wigton. The will of Cuthbert Bryscoe of Wigton was dated 28 April 1609 and probated 27 July 1609. He named his wife, ISABEL \_\_\_\_;

<sup>71</sup> Ibid., 1576 [FSL DGS 8,036,790].

<sup>72</sup> Ibid., 1591 [FSL DGS 8,036,809].

oldest son, Robert; and other children, John, William, Janet, Elizabeth, and Isabel.<sup>[73]</sup>

2. **EDWARD<sup>B</sup> BRISCOE** (*Guy<sup>C</sup>*), who was born say 1530 if his eldest son married for the first time by circa 1579, was of Crosscanonby, Cumberland. He seems to be the Edward Briscoo of Crosscanonby whose inventory was taken 4 February 1613[/4] and filed at Wigton on 1 May 1614.<sup>[74]</sup> He was remembered in the will of his son, Rev. Guy Briscowe of Sundridge, Kent, dated 25 May 1594, which left him ten shillings if still living. The name of Edward's wife is not recorded.

Children of Edward<sup>B</sup> Briscoe, order uncertain, are:

3. i. GUY<sup>A</sup> BRISCOE, b. say 1555, poss. m. (1) GRACE BOLDE; m. (2?) MARY WILSON.
- ii. RICHARD BRISCOE, second son; named in the 1615 Visitation of Cumberland, but it is not known whether he was still living.<sup>[75]</sup>
- iii. MARGARET BRISCOE, bequeathed, if still living, 10s in the will of her brother Guy Briscowe.<sup>[76]</sup>

3. **REVEREND GUY<sup>A</sup> BRISCOE** (*Edward<sup>B</sup>, Guy<sup>C</sup>*) was born in say 1555, assuming that the eldest of his children was born in say 1579, only a few years before his first appearance as vicar at Sundridge, Kent, where he was buried on 28 February 1594/5. Perhaps he was the Guy Brisco who married **GRACE BOLDE** at All Hallows Lombard Street, London, England, 11 May 1579, but no other record of her as Guy's wife is known.<sup>[77]</sup> Guy<sup>A</sup> married, possibly as his second wife, **MARY WILSON**, daughter of William Wilson, gentleman, of Welbourn, Lincolnshire.<sup>[78]</sup> She was born in say 1560, if still of childbearing age in 1604 when her second husband made a provision in his will in case "it please God my Wife be with Chyld."<sup>[79]</sup> She is believed to be Guy's wife from 1583 until his death, as there is no recorded burial of his wife at Sundridge. She was buried at Wouldham, Kent, 19 February 1612/3, having married twice more.<sup>[80]</sup> She married second at Cliffe, Kent, 24 June 1600, **MARTIN CO(A)TES** of Rochester, Kent.<sup>[81]</sup> In his will, dated 10–13 May 1604 and probated 9 July 1605, Martin Coates "thelder" mentioned his wife Mary, but also requested burial in the north aisle of the cathedral church in Rochester, near his late wife.<sup>[82]</sup> Mary was married thirdly to **WILLIAM BETTS**, gentleman, who was buried at Wouldham, 26 October

<sup>73</sup> Ibid., 1609 [FSL DGS 8,036,823].

<sup>74</sup> Ibid., 1614 [FSL DGS 8,097,485].

<sup>75</sup> Fetherston, *Visitation of the County of Cumberland* [note 22], 11.

<sup>76</sup> Register Scott, 20, Prerogative Court of Canterbury, PROB/11/85/185.

<sup>77</sup> All Hallows Lombard Street, London, Parish Register, 1550–1653, p. 47, "London, England, Church of England Baptisms, Marriages, and Burials, 1538–1812," *Ancestry.com*.

<sup>78</sup> Bartlett, "Ancestry and Descendants of Rev. John Wilson," *Register* 61 (1907):36–37.

<sup>79</sup> Archdeaconry of Rochester, Registered Wills [note 57], 19:471 recto–471 verso. This estimate of Mary's birth date is later than given by Bartlett, "Ancestry and Descendants of Rev. John Wilson," *Register* 61 (1907):36.

<sup>80</sup> Wouldham, All Saints Parish Records, Composite Register, 1538–1721 [note 54], image 18 of 25.

<sup>81</sup> Cliffe at Hoo, St. Helen Parish Records, Composite Register, 1558–1654 [note 38], image 73 of 117.

<sup>82</sup> Archdeaconry of Rochester, Registered Wills [note 57], 19:1:469–474.



1614.<sup>[83]</sup> This marriage is established by Mary's will, dated 2 January 161[2]/3, which names her husband and surviving children,<sup>[84]</sup> and by an August 1613 bond in the Wiston Archives, which specifies that Mary, by then deceased, had been married to both Guy and William.<sup>[85]</sup> The evidence is not decisive on whether she was the mother of Guy's oldest daughter, Mary, or of Martin's daughter Mary, whom she called a daughter in her will. Her youngest son, Guy Briscoe of St. Nicholas, Rochester, names Mary, wife of William Hodges, as his sister in his will.<sup>[86]</sup> Mary Betts appears to mention the same Mary Hodges in her will but does not call her a daughter.

Children of Rev. Guy<sup>A</sup> Briscowe, possibly by Grace Bolde:

- i. MARY BRISCOE, b. say 1579; aged under 18 in 1594; living in 1625; m. by 1613 WILLIAM HODGES.
- ii. ELIZABETH BRISCOE, b. say 1581, bur. Sundridge 24 Oct. 1583.

Children of Rev. Guy<sup>A</sup> and Mary (Wilson) Briscoe, bp. Sundridge:

- iii. (prob.) ANN BRISCOE, bp. 15 Sept. 1583, bur. Sundridge 22 Oct. 1583.
- iv. ANN BRISCOE, bp. 20 May 1585, prob. d. by 1613; m. (1) by 1604 REV. WILLIAM COLLINS, b. ca. 1566 (aged 20 in 1586),<sup>[87]</sup> d. 1615, prob. in Rochester, and m. (2) by 1613 MARGARET (\_\_\_\_).

Child:

1. *Grace Collins*, aged under 20 and unmarried in 1613.
- v. THOMAS BRISCOE, bp. 21 Aug. 1586; named in his father's will but not his mother's.
- vi. ISABEL BRISCOE, bp. 29 Nov. 1587, living in 1625; m. by say 1610 THOMAS CAVE.

Children, named in her mother's will:

1. *Martin Cave*.
2. *Anne Cave*.
- vii. EDWARD BRISCOE, bp. 4 May 1589, living in 1625.
4. viii. WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> BRISCOE, bp. 29 June 1591; m. (1) JANE (\_\_\_\_), (2) CICELY DEALE.
- ix. JOHN BRISCOE, bp. 3 Sept. 1592, living in 1625; perhaps the John Briscoe who "died at the Almshouse" and was bur. St. Nicholas, Rochester, 29 Jan. 1669/70.<sup>[88]</sup>
- x. GUY BRISCOE, bp. 4 Aug. 1594, bur. St. Nicholas, Rochester, 20 Sept. 1625, apparently never married.<sup>[89]</sup>

<sup>83</sup> Wouldham, All Saints Parish Records, Composite Register, 1538–1721 [note 54], image 18 of 25.

<sup>84</sup> Archdeaconry of Rochester, Registered Wills [note 57], 20:357–358.

<sup>85</sup> Booker, *The Wiston Archives: A Catalogue* [note 55], 1:357–358.

<sup>86</sup> Archdeaconry of Rochester, Registered Wills [note 57], 21:152.

<sup>87</sup> Foster, *Alumni Oxonienses* [note 33], 1:310.

<sup>88</sup> Rochester, St. Nicholas Parish Records, Composite Register, 1624–1915, P306/1/1, Medway Archives, PDF, image 15 of 27, P306-01-01(4).pdf, catalog entry, cityark.medway.gov.uk/Details/archive/110009294.

<sup>89</sup> *Ibid.*, image 24 of 26, P306-01-01(2).pdf.

4. **WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> BRISCOE** (*Guy<sup>A</sup>, Edward<sup>B</sup>, Guy<sup>C</sup>*) was baptized at Sundridge on 24 June 1591. He first married by 1619, and probably by 1617, **JANE** (\_\_\_\_). She was born in say 1597 if William's son Thomas, baptized in 1617, was also her eldest child; and buried at Watford, Hertfordshire, 3 May 1637. William married second, 17 August 1637 at Watford, **CICELY DEALE**. She died in Boston, 9 December 1661.<sup>[90]</sup> William had an unnamed "infant" buried at Watford on 19 June 1630, and a "child" buried there two days later. He may have had another child buried there on 25 April 1638, but in that entry only the date and the surname are legible.

William was an inhabitant of Boston by 24 February 1639/40 when "William Briscoe, taylor, [was] Allowed to be an Inhabitant, and to have a great Lott, for eight heads, at the mount [Braintree]."<sup>[91]</sup> On 30 March 1640/[41], "also William Briscoe, Taylor, hath granted him an house lott in the way between Robte Walkers and the Round Marsh, to be sett out by Mr. Colbron and Jacob Ellyott."<sup>[92]</sup> He was admitted to the First Church in Boston on 30 11<sup>th</sup> month [January] 1640/[1] and his wife Cicely on 4 5<sup>th</sup> month [July] 1641.<sup>[93]</sup> He was admitted a freeman of the colony on 2 June 1641.<sup>[94]</sup>

On 31 11<sup>th</sup> month [January] 1641/[2], "There is granted to William Briskoe to have an Addition for one head to his Lot formerly granted at Mount Wollaston *alias* Braintree."<sup>[95]</sup>

On 17 October 1643, "Mr. Biscoe his petition is remitted to 50 sh<sup>s</sup>, & that to be taken."<sup>[96]</sup> This entry may pertain to Nathaniel Biscoe or Briscoe of Watertown, as William generally was not known as "Mr."

At Boston selectmen's meetings held on 28 March and 26 December 1642, William Briscoe was chosen overseer of fences for the precinct of Muddy River.<sup>[97]</sup> He was again chosen an overseer of fences on 29 March 1647.<sup>[98]</sup>

On the 30<sup>th</sup> 1<sup>st</sup> month [March] 1646, William Brisco and several others "that hath now plots unbuilt on them shall be warned to the next towne meeting."<sup>[99]</sup> William's house stood on what is now the north side of Boylston Street (then known as Frog Lane), between the present-day Washington and Tremont streets.<sup>[100]</sup> The Boston Book of Possessions describes the property as a house and garden bounded with Robert Walker east, the Common north,

<sup>90</sup> Appleton, *Boston Births, Baptisms, Marriages, and Deaths, 1630–1699* [note 6], 81; *Register* 18 (1864):332.

<sup>91</sup> *Second Report of the Record Commissioners* [note 1], Part I, 48.

<sup>92</sup> *Ibid.*, Part I, 52.

<sup>93</sup> Pierce, *Records of the First Church in Boston* [note 2], 1:32–33.

<sup>94</sup> Shurtleff, *Records of the Governor and Company of the Massachusetts Bay* [note 3], 1:378, cited in *Register* 3 (1849):188.

<sup>95</sup> *Second report of the Record Commissioners* [note 1], Part I, 65.

<sup>96</sup> Shurtleff, *Records of the Governor and Company of the Massachusetts Bay* [note 3], 2:52.

<sup>97</sup> Robert Francis Seybolt, *The town officials of Colonial Boston 1634–1775* (Cambridge, Mass.: Harvard University Press, 1939), 11–12. Muddy River was set off in 1705 as the town of Brookline.

<sup>98</sup> *Ibid.*, 15.

<sup>99</sup> *Second Report of the Record Commissioners* [note 1], Part I, 88.

<sup>100</sup> Justin Winsor, *The Memorial History of Boston* (Boston: Ticknor and Co., 1880–81), 1:542; 2:xxvii.

the street south, and [Cotton] Flack west.<sup>[101]</sup> Additionally he owned, by a grant from Thomas Alcock of Dedham, “a lott of twenty acres be it more or lesse, bounded with Edmund Crosse on the east and Edward Belchar on the west, half a mile from M<sup>r</sup>. Hibbins ferme [farm] : and this was by a deed dat. in the yeare 1644.”<sup>[102]</sup>

On the 27<sup>th</sup> 6<sup>th</sup> month [August] 1648, “our brother William Briscoe and our sister Sisely his wife had letters of Recommendation granted them unto the Church of Christ at Milford [Conn.]” On the same date, “consent of the church by their silence letters of Recommendation granted unto them [the Briscoes] to the church at Lynn being to dwell there for a season.”<sup>[103]</sup>

William died in Boston between 9 September 1662, when he was the grantee of a conditional deed from Robert and Elizabeth Gibbs,<sup>[104]</sup> and 13 June 1667, when William’s estate was inventoried and administration was granted to his son Benjamin “his sonn that tooke all the Care & paines with him in his life time.” An inventory taken by Henry Rust and John Marion, consisting entirely of personal estate, amounted to £17 7s.<sup>[105]</sup>

Sometime during his lifetime, William sold his 20-acre great lot at Muddy River for £25 to John Alcock, physician, but never gave him a written deed. Alcock himself died in 1667. In order to clear the property’s title, Benjamin Brisco, as administrator of his late father’s estate, executed a deed to Alcock’s heirs acknowledging the fact, dated 7 May 1670.<sup>[106]</sup>

Children of William<sup>1</sup> and Jane (\_\_\_) Briscoe, bp. Watford:

- i. THOMAS<sup>2</sup> BRISCOE, bp. 16 Nov. 1617.
- ii. DANIEL BRISCOE, bp. 20 Oct. 1619, d. Boston in 3<sup>rd</sup> mo. [May] 1642.<sup>[107]</sup> “Daniell Briscoe the sonne of our brother Willyam Briscoe” was admitted a member of the First Church on 17<sup>th</sup> 2<sup>nd</sup> mo. [Apr.] 1642.<sup>[108]</sup> He was made freeman 18 May 1642.<sup>[109]</sup> He is thought to be “One Nathaniel Briscoe a godly young man newly admitted a member of the Church,” whose death by drowning is reported in John Winthrop’s journal under date of 8 4<sup>th</sup> mo. [June] 1642.<sup>[110]</sup>
- iii. NATHANIEL BRISCOE, bp. 8 April 1621.
- iv. JOHN BRISCOE, bp. 27 Oct. 1622; bur. Watford 1 Feb. 1637/8.
- v. WILLIAM BRISCOE, bp. 24 Oct. 1624.

<sup>101</sup> *Second Report of the Record Commissioners* [note 1], Part II, 33.

<sup>102</sup> *Ibid.*, Part II, 34. This land is at Muddy River (Brookline).

<sup>103</sup> Pierce, *Records of the First Church in Boston* [note 2], 1:49–50.

<sup>104</sup> *Suffolk Deeds, Liber IV* [note 5], 68–69.

<sup>105</sup> Suffolk Co. Probate, file 449.

<sup>106</sup> Suffolk Co. Deeds, 6:213–14, recorded 29 Aug. 1670.

<sup>107</sup> Appleton, *Boston Births, Baptisms, Marriages, and Deaths, 1630–1699* [note 6], 12, “Daniell, of W<sup>m</sup> Brisco, died the 3<sup>mo</sup> 1642.”

<sup>108</sup> Pierce, *Records of the First Church in Boston* [note 2], 1:36.

<sup>109</sup> *A Volume of Records Relating to the Early History of Boston, Containing Miscellaneous Papers* (Boston: Municipal Printing Office, 1900) [Boston Record Commissioners, vol. 29], 142.

<sup>110</sup> Richard S. Dunn, James Savage, and Laetitia Yeandle, eds., *The Journal of John Winthrop, 1630–1649* (Cambridge, Mass., and London, Eng.: Belknap Press of Harvard University Press, 1996), 393 and n. 68.

- vi. ELIZABETH BRISCOE, bp. 5 Mar. 1625/6.  
 5. vii. JOSEPH BRISCOE, bp. 19 Aug. 1627; m. ABIGAIL COMPTON.  
 6. viii. BENJAMIN BRISCOE, bp. 10 April 1629; m. SARAH [CONSTABLE?].  
 ix. LYDIA BRISCOE, bp. 26 Feb. 1631/2.

Child of William<sup>1</sup> and Cicely (Deale) Briscoe, bp. Watford:

7. x. EZEKIEL BRISCOE, bp. 16 April 1639; m. REBECCA (\_\_\_)

**5. JOSEPH<sup>2</sup> BRISCOE** (William<sup>1</sup>, Guy<sup>A</sup>, Edward<sup>B</sup>, Guy<sup>C</sup>), was baptized at Watford, Hertfordshire 19 August 1627. He married at Boston 30 January 1651[2] by William Hibbins, **ABIGAIL COMPTON**, daughter of John and Susanna (\_\_\_) Compton.<sup>[111]</sup>

Joseph drowned 1 January 1657/8.<sup>[112]</sup> Abigail married (2) at Boston, 23 September 1659, by Governor John Endicott, Abraham Busby.<sup>[113]</sup> By a deed dated 2 July 1683, Abraham Busby of Boston, baker, and Abigail his wife, “for divers good causes and considerations moveing them, Especially for and in consideration that they received of their mother law Susanna Compton the Relict of the late John Compton as ffeoffees in trust for the use of Joseph Brisco onely Son and heire of the said late John Compton and Susanna his wife as being the Grand Childe by Abigail their onely daughter then wife to the late Joseph Brisco of Boston the sole house lands & debts & other goods that the said Susan dyed possessed of and of right belonged to the s<sup>d</sup> Joseph Brisco long since of age which they improved to their own use, in full Satisfaction thereof and a final conclusion of all differences whatsoever that now is or hath been between them in any or all such respects” gave to Joseph a parcel of land in Boston bounded fronting on the street to Roxbury (present-day Washington Street) 12 feet and bounded by land of John Williams and Mr. Mason and Abraham Busby’s house and land to the south.<sup>[114]</sup>

Known child of Joseph<sup>2</sup> and Abigail (Compton) Briscoe:

8. i. JOSEPH<sup>3</sup> BRISCOE, b. Boston 21 Aug. 1658; m. REBECCA (\_\_\_).

**6. BENJAMIN<sup>2</sup> BRISCOE** (William<sup>1</sup>, Guy<sup>A</sup>, Edward<sup>B</sup>, Guy<sup>C</sup>) was baptized at Watford, Hertfordshire, 10 April 1629. He married by 16 6<sup>th</sup> month [August] 1656 (birth of first known child), **SARAH [CONSTABLE?]**, daughter of Ann (\_\_\_) (Constable) Long, widow successively of \_\_\_ Constable and Philip

<sup>111</sup> Appleton, *Boston Births, Baptisms, Marriages, and Deaths, 1630–1699* [note 6], 34.

<sup>112</sup> *Ibid.*, 61; James Savage, *A genealogical dictionary of the first settlers of New England, showing three generations of those who came before May, 1692, on the basis of Farmer’s Register* (Boston: Little, Brown and Co., 1860–62), 1:256.

<sup>113</sup> Robert Charles Anderson, *The Great Migration: Immigrants to New England 1634–1635* (7 vols., Boston: NEHGS, 1999–2011), 2:171; Appleton, *Boston Births, Baptisms, Marriages, and Deaths, 1630–1699* [note 6], 71.

<sup>114</sup> Suffolk Co. Deeds, 12:394, recorded 16 July 1683. This land is on the west side of Washington St. between Bromfield and Winter.

Long.<sup>[115]</sup> In 1670 and 1675, Ann named Sarah as her daughter in deeds, described below in more detail.<sup>[116]</sup>

Benjamin was a shoemaker. On 28 June 1658, Benjamin Brisco and Thomas Edsell gave a £20 bond for the good behavior of Walter Salter who was admitted an inhabitant of Boston.<sup>[117]</sup> “Benj. Brisco” was one of the signers of a bond dated 13 April 1658 for settling the estate of William Weare of Boston, shoemaker.<sup>[118]</sup> On 13 November 1659, Benjamin Briscoe and Zachary Phillips deposed regarding the will of Philip Long of Boston.<sup>[119]</sup>

By his will, dated 31 May and proved 21 August 1667, John Wilson Senior of Boston left 40 shillings to his cousin Benjamin Brisco.<sup>[120]</sup>

He was living at Lynn in 1660.<sup>[121]</sup> By a deed dated 26 April 1660, Richard Blood of Lynn, yeoman, and Isabel his wife, sold for £29 to Benjamin Brisco of the same place, shoemaker, a 6-acre lot with an addition in Lynn, also Lot 14 on Bass Neck in Nahant, containing 2 acres.<sup>[122]</sup> By a deed dated 9 August 1664, Benjamin Brisco of Boston, shoemaker, and Sara, his wife, sold for £70 to John Jolliffe of Boston, merchant, a dwelling house and orchard with half an acre of land in Lynn which he had bought from Robert and John Mansfield of Lynn, also a 6-acre lot of land in Lynn, all the wood and timber growing on Lots 13 and 14 on Bass Neck at Nahant in Lynn; both of which he had bought from Richard Blood and the said John Mansfield by deed dated 27 April 1660; also a mare, a black colt and all the moveables in the dwelling house.<sup>[123]</sup>

In a case of assault tried at the March 1663 term of the Ipswich Court, Ezekiel Needham deposed that “when y<sup>t</sup> I did live with beniamine Briscoe in y<sup>e</sup> yeare 1661: there cam a man & fell out with my m<sup>r</sup> Briscoe & stroke my m<sup>r</sup> in his shope: where ther was none but my m<sup>r</sup> & my selfe & y<sup>e</sup> man & dannie Mathew did profer for to swere y<sup>e</sup> Brimmat did strike my m<sup>r</sup> when y<sup>t</sup> hee was in another rome with y<sup>e</sup> Child where hee Could not see him stroke.”<sup>[124]</sup>

<sup>115</sup> Sarah is traditionally identified as a daughter of Philip (Savage, *Genealogical Dictionary of New England* [note 112], 1:255; 3:108; *Essex Antiquarian* 12 [1908]: 138, 140–141), or of both Philip and Ann (Hallock P. Long, “Settlers Surnamed Long to New England before 1700,” *Register* 104 [1950]:39). However, the earliest known record of Ann as Philip’s wife is her admission to the First Church in Boston, 2 1<sup>st</sup> mo. [Mar.] 1650/[1] (Pierce, *Records of the First Church in Boston* [note 2], 1:51). In another place Savage suggests that Ann’s first husband was a Thomas Constable of Boston who died “a. 1650” (*Genealogical Dictionary of New England*, 1:443), but the documentary basis of this claim is uncertain. It may be derived from Ann’s last known deed as grantor, to the town and church of Boston, 20 Feb. 1682/3. The grantor is called “Ann Long of Boston in the County of Suffolke in Colony of the Massachusetts in New England widdow Thomas Constable of Boston aforesd. Tobacco Spinner.” The body of the deed suggests that this Thomas was a separate grantor, but the only signature is Ann’s. *Suffolk Deeds, Liber XII* (Boston: Rockwell and Churchill Press, 1902), 372–373.

<sup>116</sup> Suffolk Co. Deeds, 8:299–301; 9:215–216.

<sup>117</sup> *Second report of the Record Commissioners* [note 1], Part I, 143.

<sup>118</sup> *Register* 8 (1854):353.

<sup>119</sup> Benjamin was one of the witnesses to Phillip Long’s will, dated 27 October 1658 by which the testator left his estate to his wife Ann Long (Suffolk Co. Probate, file 221).

<sup>120</sup> *Ibid.*, 17 (1863):344.

<sup>121</sup> *The Essex Antiquarian* 12 (1908):138.

<sup>122</sup> Essex Co. Deeds, 2:123, recorded 17 Mar. 1661/[2?].

<sup>123</sup> *Ibid.*, 3:21, recorded 16: 7mo: 1667.

<sup>124</sup> *Records and Files of the Quarterly Courts of Essex County*, 9 vols. (Salem, Mass.: The Essex Institute, 1911–75), 3:32.

By a deed dated and acknowledged 16 September 1669, William Talmage of Boston (Elizabeth, his wife, consenting) sold for £5 “current money of New England” to Benjamin Brisco of Boston, a triangular piece of land in Boston, being part of Talmage’s pasture land, bounded southwesterly 10 rods adjoining the pasture land of Maj. Gen. John Leverett by the new highway leading to Roxbury (present-day Washington Street), on the east and southerly side 7 rods and 6 feet by land lately sold by Talmage to John Clough, feltmaker, and on the north side and westerly 7 rods 5 feet.<sup>[125]</sup> He sold this land for £30 to John Bennet of Dorchester, blacksmith, by deed dated and acknowledged 10 February 1670/[71].<sup>[126]</sup> By a deed dated 16 September 1670 and acknowledged the following day, Benjamin Brisco of Boston, cordwainer, and Sarah, his wife, having received by free gift of his late father, William Brisco, half of a house and orchard on the Great Street going to Roxbury, his brother Ezekiel Brisco owning the other half, and being obliged to pay £30 to Joseph Brisco, grandchild of William, if he attain the age of 21 years, sold his half for £90 to Thomas Danforth of Cambridge. Thomas was to pay the £30 to Joseph Brisco when he attained the age of 21 years.<sup>[127]</sup>

By a deed dated 14 December 1670 and acknowledged 10 March 1670/1, Ann Long of Boston, widow and relict of Phillip Long, late deceased tobacco man, in consideration of the payment of a sum of money to Edward Tyng Esq<sup>r</sup> by Benjamin Brisco of Boston, shopkeeper, to discharge a pretended mortgage on her house and land, conveyed to Brisco that portion of her house and land currently in the possession of David Faulkner and Brian Murphy, bounded west on the street leading towards the Castle Tavern (present-day Union Street by Marsh Lane), reserving to herself and her son Thomas Constable the lifetime privilege of ingress, egress, and regress through the premises to fetch water and use the kitchen; the true meaning and intention being that, out of her natural affection towards her daughter, Sarah, the wife of Benjamin, if Benjamin were to sell the premises, he must then buy another house and land in Boston as good and convenient in all respects as the bargained premises.<sup>[128]</sup> On 1 July 1675 Ann executed another deed to Benjamin whereby she released him from the above conditions.<sup>[129]</sup>

By a deed dated 22 July 1673 and acknowledged 4 December 1674, Benjamin Brisco of Boston, shoemaker, sold for £3 “long since paid by John Hull of Boston,” goldsmith, a 21-acre parcel of land in the woods in Braintree but belonging to the town of Boston and laid out to William Kirby and others thirty-four years earlier.<sup>[130]</sup> By a deed dated 28 April 1674, John Clough Jr. of Boston (wife Mary consenting), sold for £8 to Benjamin Briscoe of Boston,

---

<sup>125</sup> Suffolk Co. Deeds, 6:113–114, recorded 5 Oct. 1669.

<sup>126</sup> *Ibid.*, 16:116, recorded 12 June 1693.

<sup>127</sup> *Ibid.*, 6:221–223 recorded 20 Sept. 1670.

<sup>128</sup> *Ibid.*, 8:299–301, recorded 20:12:1673[/74]. This property is located just a few feet from the present-day Union Oyster House restaurant.

<sup>129</sup> *Ibid.*, 9:215–216, recorded 3 5<sup>th</sup> mo. [July] 1675.

<sup>130</sup> *Ibid.*, 10:26–27, recorded 20 Feb. 1676/7. This deed ends with the note, “It is agreed at the Ensealing that John Hull is to bee at all the charge & paines to find out the sd. Land & if hee never find it is not to molest sd. Benjamin Brisco.”

cordwainer, a small parcel of land in Boston adjoining his own land and bounded on one side by John Bennett's fence.<sup>[131]</sup>

By a deed dated and acknowledged 5 July 1675, Benjamin Briscoe of Boston, cordwainer, and Sarah his wife, mortgaged for £110 to Thomas Kellond of Boston, merchant, a messuage or tenement on Boston near the water mill, bounded on the west by the street leading from the head of the great dock to the said water mill, north by land of William Kerby, east by house and land of Thomas Constable, and south by land of John Andrews, measuring 30 feet by 39 feet by 37½ feet. The deed was to be void if Benjamin was to pay Thomas the sum of £7 on 1 July 1676 and £117 on or before 5 July 1677.<sup>[132]</sup>

At the 25 April 1676 session of the Suffolk County Court, Benjamin Briscoe was granted a license to retail strong waters by small quantities for the ensuing year, provided that the townspeople not drink it in his house.<sup>[133]</sup> His license was renewed in 1677 and 1678.<sup>[134]</sup> On 29 April 1679, he was fined £5 for retailing cider without a license, and was disenabled from selling strong liquors for the future.<sup>[135]</sup> On 28 October 1678 he appeared in Suffolk County Court and agreed to pay a debt of £29 3s. to Henry Alleine, merchant.<sup>[136]</sup> His name appears on the list of inhabitants who took the oath of allegiance before Gov. John Leverett on 11 November 1678.<sup>[137]</sup>

By a deed dated 10 February and acknowledged 20 February 1678/79, Benjamin Briscoe of Boston, cordwainer, mortgaged for £100 to John Hull and Henry Allen, both of Boston, merchants, several parcels of land with the buildings thereon, located on the west side of the highway going to Roxbury (south of present-day Boylston Street), with repayment to be made by 11 February 1680. On 24 January 1683[/84], having long since missed the date of payment, he freely forfeited and surrendered title to the properties to Samuel Sewall, one of the administrators of the estate of John Hull, and to Henry Allen, merchant.<sup>[138]</sup>

Benjamin died at Boston 19 December 1689.<sup>[139]</sup>

Children of Benjamin<sup>2</sup> and Sarah [Constable?] Briscoe, born at Boston, except as noted:<sup>[140]</sup>

- i. PHILIP<sup>3</sup> BRISCOE, d. Boston 16 6<sup>th</sup> mo. [Aug.] 1656.<sup>[141]</sup>
- ii. HANNAH BRISCOE, b. 6 Feb. 1656/7;<sup>[142]</sup> d. Boston 7 5<sup>th</sup> mo. [July] 1658.<sup>[143]</sup>

<sup>131</sup> *Ibid.*, 9:54–55, recorded 4 x<sup>br</sup> [Dec.] 1674.

<sup>132</sup> *Ibid.*, 9:219, recorded 6 5<sup>th</sup> mo. [July] 1675. This is the property conveyed by Ann Long in 1670 (see note 127).

<sup>133</sup> *Records of the Suffolk County Court* [note 7], 2:701.

<sup>134</sup> *Ibid.*, 2:814, 920.

<sup>135</sup> *Ibid.*, 2:1017.

<sup>136</sup> *Ibid.*, 2:946.

<sup>137</sup> *Ibid.*, 2:963.

<sup>138</sup> Suffolk Co. Deeds, 11:130–32, recorded 25 Feb. 1678/9.

<sup>139</sup> Appleton, *Boston Births, Baptisms, Marriages, and Deaths, 1630–1699* [note 6], 187.

<sup>140</sup> Savage, *Genealogical dictionary of New England* [note 112], 1:255–56.

<sup>141</sup> Appleton, *Boston Births, Baptisms, Marriages, and Deaths, 1630–1699* [note 6], 56; *Register* 10 (1856):22.

<sup>142</sup> Appleton, *Boston Births, Baptisms, Marriages, and Deaths, 1630–1699* [note 6], 61.

<sup>143</sup> *Ibid.*, 9:66.

- iii. SARAH BRISCOE, b. Lynn 18 July 1660;<sup>[144]</sup> d. Boston 26 June 1659.<sup>[145]</sup>
- 9. iv. WILLIAM BRISCOE, b. 7 Apr. 1663; m. (1) RACHEL (\_\_\_\_); m. (2) SARAH FARE.
- v. ANNA BRISCOE, b. 31 Jan. 1664[/5];<sup>[146]</sup> no further record found.
- vi. MARY BRISCOE, b. 22 Dec. 1665;<sup>[147]</sup> no further record found.
- vii. JOHN BRISCOE, b. 20 Jan. 1665[/6];<sup>[148]</sup> no further record found.
- viii. REBECCA BRISCOE, b. 20 Feb. 1669[/70];<sup>[149]</sup> no further record found.
- ix. BENJAMIN BRISCOE, b. 2 May 1671;<sup>[150]</sup> no further record found.
- x. SUSANNA BRISCOE, b. 9 Feb. 1673/4;<sup>[151]</sup> no further record found.

7. **EZEKIEL<sup>2</sup> BRISCOE** (*William<sup>1</sup>, Guy<sup>A</sup>, Edward<sup>B</sup>, Guy<sup>C</sup>*) was baptized at Watford, Hertfordshire 16 April 1639. He married by 1670, **REBECCA** (\_\_\_\_).

By a deed dated 3 November 1671, Thomas Danforth of Cambridge, Esq<sup>r</sup> and Mary his wife sold for £90 to Ezekiel Brisco of Boston, mariner, a dwelling house, shop, yard, and backside well in Boston which he lately purchased from Ezekiel's brother Benjamin Brisco, cordwainer. Ezekiel was obliged to pay the sum of £30 to Joseph<sup>3</sup> Brisco, grandchild of the late William<sup>1</sup> Brisco when he reached the age of 21 years, as provided in the original deed of Robert Gibbs to the said William Brisco.<sup>[152]</sup>

Ezekiel was a mariner, and died in 1674,<sup>[153]</sup> apparently in Bristol, England. On 27 October 1674, "Administracōn to the Estate of Ezekeiell Brisco late of Boston deceased (in Bristoll) [was] granted to Rebecca his relict in behalf of herself & children." On 16 November 1674 Rebecca presented an inventory of the estate, amounting to £236 16s 6d, of which £200 consisted of the house and land and the remainder for household items and the deceased's wearing apparel.<sup>[154]</sup>

By a deed dated 8 April 1675, Rebecca Brisco, relict and administratrix of the estate of Ezekiel Brisco of Boston, mariner, deceased, put up her late husband's house and land on the east side of Washington Street, as described in Suffolk County Deeds, 6:222, as collateral for her full and proper administration of his estate.<sup>[155]</sup> On 29 January 1677/8 Rebecca was granted the improvement of the estate for her own and her children's maintenance until they came of age.<sup>[156]</sup>

<sup>144</sup> *Vital Records of Lynn Massachusetts to the End of the Year 1849* (Salem, Mass.: The Essex Institute, 1905), 1:75; *The Essex Antiquarian* 12 (1908):140–41; *Register* 5 (1851):94.

<sup>145</sup> Appleton, *Boston Births, Baptisms, Marriages, and Deaths, 1630–1699* [note 6], 70; *Register* 18 (1864):168.

<sup>146</sup> Appleton, *Boston Births, Baptisms, Marriages, and Deaths, 1630–1699* [note 6], 91.

<sup>147</sup> *Ibid.*, 95.

<sup>148</sup> *Ibid.*, 99.

<sup>149</sup> *Ibid.*, 110.

<sup>150</sup> *Ibid.*, 118.

<sup>151</sup> *Ibid.*, 131.

<sup>152</sup> Suffolk Co. Deeds, 9:180, recorded 22 Apr. 1675. This was the house on the east side of Washington St. that William<sup>1</sup> Briscoe had purchased from Robert Gibbs on 9 Sept. 1662 (Suffolk Co. Deeds, 4:68–69).

<sup>153</sup> Savage, *Genealogical dictionary of New England* [note 112], 1:256.

<sup>154</sup> Suffolk Co. Probate, file 1206.

<sup>155</sup> Suffolk Co. Deeds, 9:179, recorded 22 Apr. 1675.

<sup>156</sup> *Records of the Suffolk County Court* [note 7], 2:885.



Sometime between this date and 4 November 1679, she married (2) Capt. William Wright of Boston. At a session of Suffolk County Court held on 4 November 1679, Joseph Brisco, grandson of William<sup>1</sup> Brisco, deceased, brought suit against the estate of his uncle, Ezekiel Brisco of Boston, deceased, that was in the hands of Capt. William Wright who had married Ezekiel's widow Rebecca. He sought the £30 legacy that had been promised to him as agreed upon at his grandfather's purchase of the Washington Street house from Robert Gibbs in 1662. The jury found for the plaintiff, and the estate was ordered to pay the requested amount to Joseph, plus 33s 6d court costs.<sup>[157]</sup> Rebecca died by 27 January 1679/80 when John Marion and John Williams, feoffees in trust for Ezekiel and Mary Brisco, children of the late Ezekiel and Mary Brisco, brought suit against Capt. William Wright who had married Rebecca, seeking £400. The bench found in favor of the plaintiffs, and ordered the defendant to deliver all the moveable estate which he received with his late wife Rebecca so that they could clear the house and land for the orphans and pay court costs.<sup>[158]</sup>

Rebecca died without having completed the administration.<sup>[159]</sup> On 22 December 1681, John Marion Sen<sup>r</sup> of Boston, cordwainer, was granted letters of administration *de bonis non*. On 9 February 1681/[82] he presented an inventory amounting to £63 14s 10d, of which £50 was for the house and land and the remainder was for household furniture and items. The estate was indebted to Samson Sheafe in the amount of £38 19s, and five shillings for other charges. In an account accepted on 19 June 1695, the administrator listed expenditures amounting to £110 7s 11d, including the sum due to Samson Sheafe in satisfaction of a judgment of the court granted against the estate, for repairs to the house to make it tenantable, and the sum of £37 14s that Marion had advanced of his own money thirteen years at 6% per annum. In his capacity as administrator, Marion was obliged to spend his own money to pay off debts and charges owed by the deceased.<sup>[160]</sup>

At a session of the Suffolk County Superior Court of Judicature held on 29 October 1695, Marion was granted a license to sell the deceased's house and land to compensate him for his loss, with the excess to go towards the estate. Accordingly, by a deed dated 31 October 1695 and acknowledged 5 June 1696, John Marion Sen<sup>r</sup>, administrator of the estate of Ezekiel Brisco, late of Boston, mariner, deceased, sold for £54 to his son, John Marion Jr. of Boston, cordwainer, a house and land located on what is now the east side of Washington Street between Milk and Summer streets.<sup>[161]</sup>

Children of Ezekiel<sup>2</sup> and Rebecca (\_\_\_) Briscoe:

<sup>157</sup> Ibid., 2:1076.

<sup>158</sup> Ibid., 2:1121–22.

<sup>159</sup> Rebecca Briscoe is reported dead as of 14 July 1682 in the records of Old South Church ("The Records of the Churches of Boston," CD-ROM [Boston: NEHGS, 2002], Old South Church, 10, also online at [americanancestors.org/search/databaserearch/31/boston-ma-church-records-1630-1895](http://americanancestors.org/search/databaserearch/31/boston-ma-church-records-1630-1895)).

<sup>160</sup> Suffolk Co. Probate, file 1206.

<sup>161</sup> Suffolk Co. Deeds, 17:268–70, recorded 26 June 1696.

- i. EZEKIEL<sup>3</sup> BRISCOE, b. 23 Feb. 1670;<sup>[162]</sup> apparently living on 19 June 1695 when an account of his father's estate lists "Pd for Cloths for Ezekiel Brisco only child of the dece<sup>d</sup> at his going to [ap]Prentice 4/7 & in money 5s," and household goods valued at £13 14s 10d delivered to him. No further record found.
- ii. MARY BRISCOE, b. 17 Dec. 1673;<sup>[163]</sup> d. by 19 June 1695 when in an account of her father's estate, her brother Ezekiel is described as the "only child of the dece<sup>d</sup>."

**8. JOSEPH<sup>3</sup> BRISCOE** (*Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>, Guy<sup>A</sup>, Edward<sup>B</sup>, Guy<sup>C</sup>*) was born 21 August 1658.<sup>[164]</sup> Joseph "the sone of our sister Abigail Brisco" was baptized in the First Church of Boston 28 6<sup>th</sup> month [August] 1658.<sup>[165]</sup> In her undated will, Susanna Compton, "widow of the Long since Departed, John Compton," left her entire estate, consisting of household items and 23s in cash, to "my little grandchild, Joseph Brisco."<sup>[166]</sup> On 23 November 1664, administration on Susanna's estate was granted to Abraham Busby in right of her grandchild, Joseph Brisco. The inventory of Susanna's estate amounted to £16 16s, and it was ordered that Busby was to have half that amount for bringing up Joseph, and he was to pay Joseph £8 8s "in very good pay" when he reached the age of 21.<sup>[167]</sup>

As noted above, Joseph was due a legacy of £30 when he reached the age of 21 as part of the agreement made by his grandfather, William<sup>1</sup> Briscoe, when he purchased a house and land on present-day Washington Street in 1662 from Robert Gibbs, and made provision for the house and land to go to his sons Ezekiel and Benjamin Briscoe. On reaching his majority, Joseph wasted no time in bringing suit against the estate of his uncle, Ezekiel<sup>2</sup> Briscoe, to collect the legacy, and the court found in his favor at the session held on 4 November 1679.<sup>[168]</sup>

Joseph married by 1679, **REBECCA** (\_\_\_).<sup>[169]</sup>

By a deed dated 19 February and acknowledged 21 February 1680/81, Joseph Brisco of Boston, baker (signing by his "X" mark), and Rebecca, his wife, sold for £30 to James Lindall of Boston, shopkeeper, a dwelling house and shop with the land on which it stood, on the east side of present-day Washington Street between Milk and Summer streets, to take possession when the lease to the same, held by John Marion Jr., expired in three and three-quarters years.<sup>[170]</sup>

By a deed dated 2 July 1683, Abraham Busby of Boston, baker, and Abigail, his wife, in consideration of what they received from their mother-in-law,

<sup>162</sup> Appleton, *Boston Births, Baptisms, Marriages, and Deaths, 1630–1699* [note 6], 113.

<sup>163</sup> *Ibid.*, 127.

<sup>164</sup> *Ibid.*, 65.

<sup>165</sup> Pierce, *Records of the First Church in Boston* [note 2], 1:333; Appleton, *Boston Births, Baptisms, Marriages, and Deaths, 1630–1699* [note 6], 67.

<sup>166</sup> *The Great Migration* [note 10], 2:170.

<sup>167</sup> *Suffolk County Wills: Abstracts of the Earliest Wills Upon Record in the County of Suffolk, Massachusetts from The New England Historical and Genealogical Register* (Baltimore: Genealogical Publishing Co., 1984), 245–46.

<sup>168</sup> *Records of the Suffolk County Court* [note 7], 2:1076.

<sup>169</sup> Savage, *Genealogical dictionary of New England* [note 112], 1:256.

<sup>170</sup> Suffolk Co. Deeds, 12:19–20, recorded 24 Feb. 1680/81.

Susannah Compton, widow of late John Compton, as trustees for use of Joseph Briscoe, only son of the late John Compton and wife Susannah, as being the grandchild by Abigail, their only daughter, then wife to the late Joseph Briscoe, conveyed to Joseph a parcel of land on the west side of what is now Washington Street, between Winter and Bromfield streets.<sup>[171]</sup> By a deed dated 6 May 1724, Joseph Briscoe of Boston, baker, with the consent of Rebeckah his wife, sold the above land with the dwelling house for £205 to William Wheeler Jr. of Boston, bricklayer.<sup>[172]</sup>

Joseph appears on the list of those who took the oath of allegiance on 11 November 1678.<sup>[173]</sup> He became a member of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company in 1692. He was chosen one of the Boston constables on 12 March 1693/4.<sup>[174]</sup> He served as a tithingman and was chosen by the town as a measurer of grain from 1706 to 1709. He was a member of the South Church and Fourth Sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1695.<sup>[175]</sup>

Joseph's name appears on a Boston tax list for Precinct 8 in 1681.<sup>[176]</sup> He appears on tax sheet 8 in 1687 and 1688.<sup>[177]</sup> He was one of the Boston men who were made freemen on 15 May 1690.<sup>[178]</sup> In 1691 he appears on a tax list described as "No. 8 Countrie Rate."<sup>[179]</sup> In 1695 he appears on a tax list as an inhabitant of Ward 8.<sup>[180]</sup>

In 1693, Joseph rented a house and land in Boston from William and Hannah (Wright) Hoar of Boston, who in the meantime had mortgaged the premises to Judith Hull and Samuel Sewall and Hannah (Hull) Sewall. The Hoars defaulted on their mortgage, but having since moved to Bristol, Massachusetts,<sup>[181]</sup> they appointed their tenant Joseph Briscoe to act as their attorney to facilitate transfer of the property to the new owners. On 28 March 1694 Joseph delivered the title to the new owners and maintained his tenancy.<sup>[182]</sup>

"Joseph Bisco" was the fourth of several hundred inhabitants of Boston who signed a petition dated 18 November 1696 to the lieutenant governor and the General Court, asking for the repeal of a 1692 law requiring that buildings in

<sup>171</sup> *Ibid.*, 12:394, recorded 16 July 1683. The corner of Washington and Bromfield streets was known as Briscow's Corner in 1708 when street names were assigned by the selectmen (*A report of the Record Commissioners of the City of Boston, containing the Boston records from 1700 to 1728* [Boston: Rockwell and Churchill, City Printers, 1883] [Boston Record Commissioners, vol. 8], 50; Oliver Ayer Roberts, *History of the Military Company now called The Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company of Massachusetts. 1637–1888* (4 vols., Boston: A. Mudge and son, 1895–1901), 1:293.

<sup>172</sup> Suffolk Co. Deeds, 37:248–49, recorded 16 June 1724.

<sup>173</sup> *Records of the Suffolk County Court* [note 7], 2:963.

<sup>174</sup> *A report of the Record Commissioners of the City of Boston, containing the Boston records from 1660 to 1701* (Boston: Rockwell and Churchill, City Printers, 1881) [Boston Record Commissioners, vol. 7], 217.

<sup>175</sup> Roberts, *History of the Military Company* [note 171], 1:293.

<sup>176</sup> *First report of the Record Commissioners of the City of Boston, 1876* (2<sup>nd</sup> ed., Boston: Rockwell and Churchill, City Printers, 1881) [Boston Record Commissioners, vol. 1], 75.

<sup>177</sup> *Ibid.*, 125, 144.

<sup>178</sup> *Register* 3 (1849):350.

<sup>179</sup> *First report of the Record Commissioners* [note 176], 156.

<sup>180</sup> *Ibid.*, 159.

<sup>181</sup> Bristol became part of Rhode Island in 1746.

<sup>182</sup> Suffolk Co. Deeds, 16:283–84, recorded 9 Feb. 1693/94.

the city be built of brick or stone.<sup>[183]</sup> Joseph Briscoe Sr. was a measurer of grain from 1706 to 1710.<sup>[184]</sup> Joseph Briscow was chosen one of the tithingmen on 14 March 1708/9, 10 March 1711/12 and 10 March 1718.<sup>[185]</sup>

Joseph Briscoe owned at least one slave, as the following record shows: "William Row, Negro Servt. to Joseph Brisco, & Johanna [Gig], Negro Servt. to Peter Thomas, [marriage] forbid by Mrs. Mary Thomas, Mrs. to ye Sd. Joanna Gig," 26 October 1720.<sup>[186]</sup>

Children of Joseph<sup>3</sup> and Rebecca (\_\_\_) Briscoe, born at Boston:<sup>[187]</sup>

- i. REBECCA<sup>4</sup> BRISCOE, b. 16 Sept. 1679,<sup>[188]</sup> bp. at the Old South Church 12 Oct. 1680,<sup>[189]</sup> m. (1) SAMUEL FOSTER, goldsmith, who d. Boston 10 Mar. 1702,<sup>[190]</sup> son of Hopestill<sup>2</sup> (*Hopestill*<sup>1</sup>) and Elizabeth (Payson) Foster.<sup>[191]</sup> On 9 Mar. 1699, Samuel Foster, goldsmith, son of Hopestill Foster of Boston, soapboiler, deceased, for the love and affection for his wife Rebecca, daughter of Joseph Brisco of Boston, baker, and for his only child Rebecca, executed a deed in which he quitclaimed all his property to Joseph as feoffee in trust.<sup>[192]</sup> She m. (2) 13 Oct. 1709,<sup>[193]</sup> THOMAS MORRIS, prob. the one bur. Boston 19 Dec. 1717,<sup>[194]</sup> m. (3) 25 Dec. 1718,<sup>[195]</sup> WILLIAM SCORCH. By a deed dated 27 June 1722, Samuel Foster, periwig-maker, and Rachel, his wife; John Best, tanner, and Rebecca, his wife; and Rebecca Scorch, wife and attorney to William Scorch, cooper; all of Boston, sold for £150 to Richard Butt of Squantum in the town of Dorchester, 9 or 10 acres of upland in Squantum which had been left to them by their father and husband, Samuel Foster, late of Boston, deceased.<sup>[196]</sup> By a deed dated 2 Aug. 1726, Rebecca Scorch (widow) and Samuel Foster (wig-maker) and wife Rachel, deeded to Elizabeth Foster (shopkeeper and widow), house and land which was the part and share of Samuel Foster, goldsmith, deceased, and husband of said Rebecca; also part of yard

<sup>183</sup> "Petition of Boston Inhabitants in 1696, that the Law Relating to Building with Brick be Repealed," *Register* 16 (1862):85.

<sup>184</sup> Seybolt, *The town officials of Colonial Boston* [note 97], 116, 119.

<sup>185</sup> *Boston records from 1700 to 1728* [note 171], 60, 89, 136.

<sup>186</sup> *A report of the Record Commissioners of the City of Boston containing the Boston marriages from 1700 to 1751* (Boston: Municipal Printing Office, 1898) [Boston Record Commissioners, vol. 28], 99.

<sup>187</sup> The births of these children are recorded as children of *John* and Rebecca Brisco in the John Pipon Bible at the Old Colony Historical Society, Taunton, Mass., as follows: Rebecca, 16 Sept. 1679; Joseph, 4 Jan. 1682; Abigail, 4 Apr. 1683; John, 14 Feb. 1684; Sarah, 1 Aug. 1686; John, 2 July 1689; Elizabeth, 24 June 1691; Susanna, 15 Apr. 1693; Mary, 7 Apr. 1696; Martha, 26 Nov. 1697; and Hannah, 27 Nov. 1700 (*Vital Records of Taunton Massachusetts to the Year 1850* [Boston: NEHGS, 1929], 1:61).

<sup>188</sup> Appleton, *Boston Births, Baptisms, Marriages, and Deaths, 1630–1699* [note 6], 148.

<sup>189</sup> "Records of the Churches of Boston" [note 159], 89.

<sup>190</sup> Robert J. Dunkle and Ann S. Lainhart, *Deaths in Boston 1700–1799* (Boston: NEHGS, 1999), 345.

<sup>191</sup> William H. Whitmore, "Capt. Hopestill Foster of Dorchester, Mass. and some of his descendants," *Register* 52 (1898):199–200.

<sup>192</sup> Suffolk Co. Deeds, 21:150–52; recorded 2 Jan 1702.

<sup>193</sup> *Boston marriages from 1700 to 1751* [note 186], 24.

<sup>194</sup> Dunkle and Lainhart, *Deaths in Boston 1700–1799* [note 190], 2:644.

<sup>195</sup> *Ibid.*, 78.

<sup>196</sup> Suffolk Co. Deeds, 36:68, recorded 28 June 1722.

and all the portion set apart for the thirds of Elizabeth Brown, grandmother of Samuel Foster, between land once belonging to Peter Lidgett, deceased, and now possessed by Thomas Fitch, Esq., south, and land of Hopestill Foster (gunsmith), deceased, and husband of said Elizabeth Foster, north and west on Fitch's alley, and front east on the lane leading from the town dock to the yard of Nicholas Morecock.<sup>[197]</sup>

Children, by first husband, born at Boston:

1. *Rebecca*<sup>5</sup> *Foster*, b. 10 Apr. 1699;<sup>[198]</sup> m. 15 Dec. 1721 by Dr. Cotton Mather, *John Best*.<sup>[199]</sup>
  2. *Samuel Foster*, b. 25 June 1701;<sup>[200]</sup> m. 5 Apr. 1722 by Mr. Joseph Sewall, *Rachel Kneeland*.<sup>[201]</sup>
- ii. JOSEPH BRISCOE, b. 4 Jan. 1681;<sup>[202]</sup> d. young.
10. iii. JOSEPH BRISCOE (again), b. 8 Jan. 1682; m. MARIAH ROBIE.
- iv. ABIGAIL BRISCOE, b. 2 April 1684,<sup>[203]</sup> bp. at the Old South Church, Boston 8 Apr. 1684;<sup>[204]</sup> m. at Boston 23 Dec. 1703, by Rev. Samuel Sewall,<sup>[205]</sup> WILLIAM PALFREY, b. Boston 17 Feb. 1681[1/2];<sup>[206]</sup> d. there 23 Apr. 1766, age 85,<sup>[207]</sup> son of William and Constance (Windsor) Palfrey. He was a sailmaker. He was one of the clerks of the market in 1714/15.<sup>[208]</sup> By a deed dated 6 May 1725, William Palfrey (sailmaker), Joseph Hubbard and Jonathan Waldo bought for £275 a brick house and land on the south side of Berry St. leading into Long Lane from Abigail, widow of Jacob Blanchard of Boston, bricklayer.<sup>[209]</sup> On 20 May 1729 William Palfrey (sailmaker) bought a house and land on the north side Water Street for £250 from John Oulton of Marblehead, merchant, and Thomas Palmer Esq<sup>r</sup> and Cornelius Waldo of Boston, both merchants.<sup>[210]</sup> On 21 Apr. 1744, William Palfrey, sailmaker, bought for £455 from Bryant Parrot of Boston, executor of the last will of Samuel Marshall, late of Boston, cooper, the southernmost end

<sup>197</sup> *Ibid.*, 40:22–23, recorded 3 Aug. 1726.

<sup>198</sup> Appleton, *Boston Births, Baptisms, Marriages, and Deaths, 1630–1699* [note 6], 247.

<sup>199</sup> *Boston marriages from 1700 to 1751* [note 186], 99.

<sup>200</sup> *A report of the Record Commissioners of the City of Boston, containing Boston births from A.D. 1700 to A.D. 1800* (Boston: Rockwell & Churchill, City Printers, 1894) [Boston Record Commissioners, vol. 24], 7.

<sup>201</sup> *Ibid.*, 106.

<sup>202</sup> Appleton, *Boston Births, Baptisms, Marriages, and Deaths, 1630–1699* [note 6], 154.

<sup>203</sup> *Ibid.*, 159.

<sup>204</sup> “Records of the Churches of Boston” [note 159], 96.

<sup>205</sup> *Boston marriages from 1700 to 1751* [note 186], 14. Samuel Sewall noted in his diary for 23 December 1703, “Mr. Brisco, now my son’s Tenant, comes to the Council-Chamber when I was left there almost alone, and desired me to Marrie his Daughter, which I did at his house. Sung the 90<sup>th</sup> Psalm from the 12<sup>th</sup> v. to the end, with earnest desire that this Match might prove better than the former” (M. Halsey Thomas, ed., *The Diary of Samuel Sewall 1674–1729* [New York: Farrar, Strauss & Giroux, 1973], 493–94).

<sup>206</sup> Appleton, *Boston Births, Baptisms, Marriages, and Deaths, 1630–1699* [note 6], 155.

<sup>207</sup> Dunkle and Lainhart, *Deaths in Boston, 1700 to 1799* [note 190], 683–84; “Boyle’s Journal of Occurrences in Boston, 1759–1778,” *Register* 84 (1930):249.

<sup>208</sup> Seybolt, *The town officials of Colonial Boston* [note 97], 139.

<sup>209</sup> Suffolk Co. Deeds, 39:4, recorded 27 Aug. 1725. Bury St. was later renamed Channing ., running east off Long Lane (now Federal St.). It is now near the intersection of Federal and Franklin.

<sup>210</sup> *Ibid.*, 44:70–71, recorded 2 Feb. 1729.

of a house and land at the southwest corner of Batterymarch and Water streets.<sup>[211]</sup> On 23 Apr. 1744, William and his wife Abigail conveyed the same for the same sum to Bryant Parrott, merchant.<sup>[212]</sup> On 5 Jan. 1753, letters of administration *de bonis non* were granted to William on the estate of “his Son in Law,” Philip Audebert.<sup>[213]</sup> By his will, dated 1 Apr. and proved 2 May 1766, William Palfrey of Boston, sailmaker, named his son Thomas and grandson William Palfrey executors. He left all his real estate to his son Thomas, and after his decease to his two grandsons, William and John Palfrey. He left £20 to his daughters Abigail Corney, Rebecca Burroughs, Elizabeth Hartley, to the three daughters of his son Richard, and to the children of his daughters Lydia, deceased, and Margaret, deceased. An inventory of his estate totaled £608 19s 6d.<sup>[214]</sup>

Children, born at Boston:

1. *William*<sup>5</sup> *Palfrey*, b. 2 Mar. 1703/04;<sup>[215]</sup> not named in father’s will.
2. *Abigail Palfrey*, b. 1 July 1706;<sup>[216]</sup> living in 1766; m. (1) at Boston 9 Jan. 1727, by Mr. Samuel Checkley, *Benjamin Jeffrey*,<sup>[217]</sup> prob. the one b. Boston 9 Aug. 1702, son of Arthur and Sarah (\_\_\_) Jeffrey;<sup>[218]</sup> m. (2) at Boston 23 Sept. 1736, by Rev. Samuel Checkley, *John Corney*,<sup>[219]</sup> b. Gloucester, Mass., 9 Dec. 1698, son of Elisha and Rebecca (Smith) Corney.<sup>[220]</sup> He was “in Cov<sup>t</sup> at Glouster” at the baptism of his first child with Abigail, at New South Church, Boston, 8 April 1737.<sup>[221]</sup> Administration on the estate of Capt. John Corney of Gloucester was granted to Abigail, 1 Dec. 1760, and she returned an account, 15 Nov. 1762.<sup>[222]</sup>
3. *Joseph Palfrey*, b. 23 May 1708;<sup>[223]</sup> not named in father’s will.
4. *Lydia Palfrey*, b. 19 June 1710;<sup>[224]</sup> d. by 1766; m. (1) at New South Church, Boston 1 Apr. 1731, by Rev. Samuel Checkley,<sup>[225]</sup> *Philip Audebert*, peruke-maker, who was living on 1 July 1741 when Margaret, “negro servant to Mr. Philip Audebert” m. Cato, “negro servant to Mrs. Mehet Buttolph.”<sup>[226]</sup> He owned a house on

<sup>211</sup> *Ibid.*, 68:83, recorded 27 Apr. 1744.

<sup>212</sup> *Ibid.*, 68:85–86, recorded 27 Apr. 1744.

<sup>213</sup> Suffolk Co. Probate, file 8810.

<sup>214</sup> *Ibid.*, file 13838.

<sup>215</sup> *Boston births from 1700 to 1800* [note 200], 25.

<sup>216</sup> *Ibid.*, 43.

<sup>217</sup> *Boston marriages from 1700 to 1751* [note 186], 138.

<sup>218</sup> *Boston births from 1700 to 1800* [note 200], 15. This Benjamin also chose Jonathan Belcher as guardian on 9 Dec. 1717, when he was “a Minor aged about fifteen years.” Suffolk Co. Probate, file 3901.

<sup>219</sup> *Ibid.*, 196.

<sup>220</sup> *Vital Records of Gloucester, Massachusetts, to the End of the Year 1850*, 3 vols. (vol. 1, Topsfield, Mass.: Topsfield Historical Society, 1917; vols. 2–3, Salem, Mass.: Essex Institute, 1924–1925), 1:178; 2:151.

<sup>221</sup> “Records of the Churches of Boston” [note 159], New South Church, p. 23.

<sup>222</sup> Essex Co. Probate, file 6361.

<sup>223</sup> *Boston births from 1700 to 1800* [note 200], 57.

<sup>224</sup> *Ibid.*, 70.

<sup>225</sup> *Boston marriages from 1700 to 1751* [note 186], 152.

<sup>226</sup> *Ibid.*, 269.

Leverett's Lane and another on King St.<sup>[227]</sup> Philip d. by 4 Aug. 1747, when letters of administration were granted to his widow, Lydia Audebert.<sup>[228]</sup> On 2 Feb. 1748 a committee set off to Lydia, as her dower, a portion of a brick dwelling house on the north side of King St. bounded west and north by Charles Apthorp Esq. and on the east by the heirs of Mr. James Townsend deceased, including that portion containing the office and shop of Messrs. Jennings and Lewis.<sup>[229]</sup> His father, also named Philip Audebert, left a will dated 7 Apr. 1753 in which he left a third of his estate to his seven grandchildren, the children of his eldest son Philip Audebert, late of Boston, peruke-maker, deceased: Philip, William, Lydia, Abigail, Thomas, Moses, and Isaiah.<sup>[230]</sup>

Lydia m. (2) at New South Church, Boston 15 Mar. 1748/49, by Rev. Samuel Checkley, *Alexander Cunningham*.<sup>[231]</sup> By an indenture dated 1 May 1749, Alexander Cunningham of Boston, mariner, and Lydia, his wife, formerly Lydia Audibert (Lydia being sole administratrix of the estate of her late husband Philip Audibert, peruke-maker, intestate), sold for £3,600 Old Tenor to William Palfrey of Boston, sailmaker, a brick dwelling house and land on the west side of Leverett's Lane in Boston.<sup>[232]</sup> On 16 June 1749, William Palfrey of Boston, sailmaker, and Abigail, his wife, sold the above premises for the same sum to Alexander Cunningham of Boston, mariner.<sup>[233]</sup> On 27 Sept. 1749, Alexander and Lydia sold the above for £3,700 Old Tenor to Richard Waite of Plymouth, mariner.<sup>[234]</sup> Lydia d. by 5 Jan. 1753, not having completed administration on her first husband's estate. On that date, letters of administration *de bonis non* were granted to her father, William Palfrey of Boston, sailmaker.<sup>[235]</sup>

5. *Richard Palfrey*, b. 29 May 1712;<sup>[236]</sup> d. Boston 1 Oct. 1721, age 9 years 4 months.<sup>[237]</sup>
6. *John Palfrey*, b. 23 June 1714;<sup>[238]</sup> m. at New South Church, Boston 4 Nov. 1736, by Rev. Samuel Checkley, *Mary Hatch* of Hanover.<sup>[239]</sup>

<sup>227</sup> Leverett's Lane is now Congress St. The house lay between State and Water streets. King St. is now State St.

<sup>228</sup> Suffolk Co. Probate, file 8810.

<sup>229</sup> *Ibid.*

<sup>230</sup> *Ibid.*, file 10856. The will was proved on 11 Oct. 1754.

<sup>231</sup> *Boston marriages from 1700 to 1751* [note 186], 347.

<sup>232</sup> Suffolk Co. Deeds, 77:96–97, recorded 27 Sept. 1749.

<sup>233</sup> *Ibid.*, 77:97–98, recorded 27 Sept. 1749.

<sup>234</sup> *Ibid.*

<sup>235</sup> Suffolk Co. Probate, file 8810.

<sup>236</sup> *Boston births from 1700 to 1800* [note 200], 85.

<sup>237</sup> Dunkle and Lainhart, *Deaths in Boston, 1700 to 1799* [note 190], 683.

<sup>238</sup> *Boston births from 1700 to 1800* [note 200], 99.

<sup>239</sup> *Boston marriages from 1700 to 1751* [note 186], 198, which calls him "John Polley"; "Records of the Churches of Boston" [note 159], New South Church, p. 89.

7. *Rebecca Palfrey*, b. 15 Oct. 1716;<sup>[240]</sup> bur. from Trinity Church, Boston, 20 Oct. 1790 as “Mrs. Burroughs Wife of Mr. John Burroughs,” age 72;<sup>[241]</sup> m. at Boston 14 Jan. 1737/38, by Rev. Samuel Checkley, *John Burroughs*,<sup>[242]</sup> b. ca. 1708, d. Boston 1 Dec. 1792, bur. from Trinity Church 4 Dec. 1792, age 84.<sup>[243]</sup> John was an innholder, and in 1763 was a surety on the bond of his sister-in-law, Elizabeth (Palfrey) Hartley, in the administration of the estate of her late husband, Thomas Hartley.
8. *Thomas Palfrey*, b. 13 Jan. 1717/8;<sup>[244]</sup> sailmaker; probably m. (1) at Boston 31 May 1738, by Rev. Samuel Checkley, *Hannah Tapper*,<sup>[245]</sup> prob. the one b. Boston 30 June 1719, daughter of Michael and Submit (Hudson) Tapper.<sup>[246]</sup> Their last known child was baptized at New South Church, 7 Mar. 1756.<sup>[247]</sup> Thomas m. (2) at Boston 19 Nov. 1766, by Rev. Penuel Bowen, *Elizabeth McNeil*,<sup>[248]</sup> who was his widow in 1772 when, as administratrix of Thomas’s estate, she sold land on the north side of Water St. in Boston to John Joy, housewright.<sup>[249]</sup> He died intestate by 20 Apr. 1770 when administration was granted to the widow Elizabeth Palfrey, who gave £1,000 bond, with William McNeil, ropemaker, and William Haskins, merchant, as sureties. An inventory, dated 21 June 1770, listed a strip of land on Water St. with a barn (£20), household items, and three Negro slaves: “an old Negro man named Sandy” and “an old Negro woman named Pegg,” both of no stated value, and “a Negro boy named Bobb” (£13 6s 8d). The total estate was valued at £140 3s 5d. It was declared insolvent on 21 Sept. 1770.<sup>[250]</sup>
9. *Elizabeth Palfrey*, b. 11 Nov. 1719;<sup>[251]</sup> living 1766; m. (1) at New South Church 4 June 1741, *William Perkins*,<sup>[252]</sup> b. 19 Nov. 1716, son of Edmund and Mary (Farris) Perkins.<sup>[253]</sup> On 7 Mar. 1760, Elizabeth Perkins of Boston, widow, was appointed administra-

<sup>240</sup> *Boston births from 1700 to 1800* [note 200], 116.

<sup>241</sup> Andrew Oliver and James Bishop Peabody, eds., *Records of The Trinity Church in Boston* (Boston: Colonial Society of Massachusetts, 1982), 2:804 [Publications of the Colonial Society of Massachusetts, vol. 56].

<sup>242</sup> *Boston marriages from 1700 to 1751* [note 186], 200.

<sup>243</sup> Dunkle and Lainhart, *Deaths in Boston, 1700–1800* [note 190], 144; Oliver and Peabody, *Records of Trinity Church* [note 242], 2:807.

<sup>244</sup> *Boston births from 1700 to 1800* [note 200], 123.

<sup>245</sup> *Boston marriages from 1700 to 1751* [note 186], 207; *Register* 142 (1988):145.

<sup>246</sup> *Boston births from 1700 to 1800* [note 200], 139; *Boston marriages from 1700 to 1751* [note 186], 78.

<sup>247</sup> “Records of the Churches of Boston” [note 159], New South Church, 39.

<sup>248</sup> *A volume of records relating to the Early History of Boston containing Boston marriages from 1752 to 1809* (Boston: Municipal Printing Office, 1903) [Boston Record Commissioners, vol. 30], 56.

<sup>249</sup> Suffolk Co. Deeds, 122:72.

<sup>250</sup> Suffolk Co. Probate, file 14702.

<sup>251</sup> *Boston births from 1700 to 1800* [note 200], 138.

<sup>252</sup> *Boston marriages from 1700 to 1751* [note 186], 345.

<sup>253</sup> *Boston births from 1700 to 1800* [note 200], 116; Augustus Thorndike Perkins, *Perkins Family of Boston*, broadside (n. p.: n. p., 1872?) ([archive.org/details/perkinsfamilyofb00perk](http://archive.org/details/perkinsfamilyofb00perk)).



trix of the estate of her late husband, William Perkins, late of Boston, chairmaker, with John Burroughs, innholder, and Thomas Palfrey, sailmaker, as sureties.<sup>[254]</sup> They had four children who lived to adulthood and were remembered by William's brother, Henry Perkins of Boston, in his will, dated 1 Aug. 1783 and proved 9 September 1783.<sup>[255]</sup>

Elizabeth m. (2) at New South Church, Boston 18 Mar. 1760, *Thomas Hartley*, cordwainer,<sup>[256]</sup> who was buried 23 Apr. 1763.<sup>[257]</sup> On 22 Mar. 1765 his widow Elizabeth was appointed administratrix of his estate, with John Burroughs, innholder, and William Perkins, cordwainer, as sureties. An inventory of his estate, dated 5 Apr. 1765, amounted to £57 9s, and consisted chiefly of household items, clothing, and a few livestock.<sup>[258]</sup> He was keeper of the hospital on Rainsford Island. She is probably the "Mrs. Hartley, aged 55" who d. Boston 20 Mar. 1775.<sup>[259]</sup>

10. *Susannah Palfrey*, b. 13 Feb. 1721/22;<sup>[260]</sup> d. by 1766; m. at New South Church, Boston 6 Sept. 1744, *John Downe/Downes*,<sup>[261]</sup> b. Boston 7 Oct. 1723, son of Thomas and Anna (Hill) Downe.<sup>[262]</sup> He was a brazier. He d. by 30 Dec. 1751 when his father Thomas Downe prayed that letters of administration on the estate of John Downe lately deceased be granted to "my brother" John Hill. Hill gave £100 bond, with Thomas Downe Jun<sup>r</sup>, sugar-baker, and Thomas Palfrey, sailmaker, all of Boston, as sureties. On 3 Mar. 1752, Hill represented that the estate was insolvent. An inventory and account listed assets of £40 13s 10/4d and claims amounting to £156 3s ¾d.<sup>[263]</sup> A Susanna Downe married Robert Edwards at Boston 17 Mar. 1755.<sup>[264]</sup>
11. *Richard Palfrey* (again), b. 9 June 1724;<sup>[265]</sup> d. between 24 June 1757 (date of will) and 23 Aug. 1757 (when his estate was ordered to be appraised);<sup>[266]</sup> m. at Gloucester, Mass. 17 Oct. 1745, by Rev. [John] White,<sup>[267]</sup> *Sarah Robinson*, bp. there 11 Sept. 1726,

<sup>254</sup> Suffolk Co. Probate, file 12286.

<sup>255</sup> *Ibid.*, file 18019.

<sup>256</sup> *Boston marriages from 1700 to 1751* [note 186], 379; "Records of the Churches of Boston" [note 159], New South Church, 95.

<sup>257</sup> Oliver and Peabody, *Records of Trinity Church* [note 242], 1:224 [Publications of the Colonial Society of Massachusetts, vol. 55].

<sup>258</sup> Suffolk Co. Probate, file 13597.

<sup>259</sup> "Boyle's Journal of Occurrences in Boston," *Register* 85 (1931):7; Dunkle and Lainhart, *Deaths in Boston 1700 to 1799* [note 190], 438.

<sup>260</sup> *Boston births from 1700 to 1800* [note 200], 152; "Records of the Churches of Boston" [note 159], New South Church, 9.

<sup>261</sup> *Boston marriages from 1700 to 1751* [note 186], 346.

<sup>262</sup> *Boston births from 1700 to 1800* [note 200], 159.

<sup>263</sup> Suffolk Co. Probate, file 9908.

<sup>264</sup> *Boston marriages from 1752 to 1809* [note 249], 14 (intention 23 Jan. 1755), 368.

<sup>265</sup> *Boston births from 1700 to 1800* [note 200], 166.

<sup>266</sup> Essex Co. Probate, file 20403.

<sup>267</sup> Gloucester, Mass. births, marriages and deaths, 1739–1794 [FSL film 864,861 image 252 of 538], 80.

daughter of Capt. Andrew and Rebecca (Ingersoll) Robinson;<sup>[268]</sup> had three daughters living in 1766. By a deed dated 30 May 1748, Abigail Tarbox alias Parsons alias Robinson of Gloucester, widow of Benjamin Tarbox, sold for £425 Old Tenor to Richard Palfrey of Boston, sailmaker, a quarter part of the great house and land on Eastern Point in Gloucester that settled upon her as one of the heirs of Capt. Andrew Robinson, deceased.<sup>[269]</sup> By a deed dated 25 Apr. 1764, Sarah Palfrey of Gloucester, widow of Richard Palfrey, late of Gloucester, sailmaker, sold for £48 to Winthrop Sargent of Gloucester, merchant, 18 acres of pasture on Eastern Point that was part of the third division of the real estate of Capt. Andrew Robinson, late of Gloucester, deceased.<sup>[270]</sup> She is probably the Sarah Palfrey who m. (2) at Gloucester 10 Mar. 1768, William Elliott of Boston.<sup>[271]</sup>

12. *Margaret Palfrey*, b. as "Mary," 12 Nov. 1725;<sup>[272]</sup> bp. as Margaret, New South Church, Boston, 14 Nov. 1725;<sup>[273]</sup> d. by 1766; m. (1) at Boston 25 Oct. 1744, *William Cunningham*,<sup>[274]</sup> b. Boston 28 Sept. 1722, son of William<sup>2</sup> (*Andrew*<sup>1</sup>) and Elizabeth (Wheeler) Cunningham.<sup>[275]</sup> He was a hatter and feltmaker. He d. by 23 May 1755<sup>[276]</sup> when the widow Margaret was named administratrix of his estate. She gave £100 bond, with Thomas Palfrey, sailmaker, and Hopestill Capen, housewright, both of Boston, as sureties. His estate consisted of personal property amounting to £119 0s 4d.<sup>[277]</sup> On 11 Mar. 1757, Margaret Cunningham of Boston, widow, was appointed guardian of her children William, Joseph, Margaret, and Sarah Cunningham, minors under the age of 14.<sup>[278]</sup>

Margaret m. (2) at New South Church, 30 Mar. 1757, *Benjamin Phillips*,<sup>[279]</sup> wharfinger, b. 3 June 1715, son of Benjamin and Hannah (Henderson) Phillips,<sup>[280]</sup> d. Lincoln, Mass., shortly before 2 May 1792.<sup>[281]</sup>

<sup>268</sup> *Gloucester Vital Records* [note 220], 1:595; John J. Babson, *History of the town of Gloucester, Cape Ann* (Gloucester, Mass.: Proctor Brothers, 1860), 142.

<sup>269</sup> Essex Co. Deeds, 91:175, recorded 8 June 1748.

<sup>270</sup> *Ibid.*, 124:245–46, recorded 28 Feb. 1767.

<sup>271</sup> *Gloucester Vital Records* [note 220], 2:398.

<sup>272</sup> *Boston births from 1700 to 1800* [note 200], 172.

<sup>273</sup> Records of the Churches of Boston [note 159], New South Church, p. 12 ("Margaret Daug<sup>r</sup> of Will<sup>m</sup> & Abigail Palfr<sup>y</sup>").

<sup>274</sup> *Boston marriages from 1700 to 1751* [note 186], 279.

<sup>275</sup> Henry Winchester Cunningham, "Andrew Cunningham of Boston and Some of His Descendants," *Register* 55 (1901):417–18.

<sup>276</sup> Dunkle and Lainhart, *Deaths in Boston 1700 to 1799* [note 190], 234.

<sup>277</sup> Suffolk Co. Probate, file 11054.

<sup>278</sup> *Ibid.*, files 11471, 11472, 11473.

<sup>279</sup> *Boston marriages from 1752 to 1809* [note 249], 378; *Register* 55 (1901): 418.

<sup>280</sup> *Boston births from 1700 to 1800* [note 200], 107; *Boston marriages from 1700 to 1751* [note 186], 46.

<sup>281</sup> Dunkle and Lainhart, *Deaths in Boston, 1700–1800* [note 190], 715; *Columbian Centinel*, Boston, Mass., Wed., 2 May 1792, 57, col. 2.

13. *Martha Palfrey*, b. 18 Dec. 1729;<sup>[282]</sup> not named in father's will.  
 v. JOHN BRISCOE, b. 30 Jan. 1684/5;<sup>[283]</sup> d. young.  
 vi. SARAH BRISCOE, b. 1 Aug. 1686;<sup>[284]</sup> bur. Philadelphia, Penn. 10<sup>th</sup> 3 mo. [May] 1761;<sup>[285]</sup> m. at Boston 9 Feb. 1709/10,<sup>[286]</sup> SAMUEL LOBDELL, possibly the Samuel who was b. at Plymouth 17 Feb. 1686/7, son of Isaac<sup>3</sup> (*Isaac*<sup>2</sup>, *Nicholas*<sup>1</sup>) and Sarah (Bryant) Lobdell.<sup>[287]</sup> Samuel was master of the sloop *Two Brothers* that sailed from New York for St. Christophers<sup>[288]</sup> on 27 May 1723, returning to Philadelphia 7 May 1724.<sup>[289]</sup> He arrived again at Philadelphia from St. Christophers with the same vessel on 18 May 1726 and 1 Sept. 1726.<sup>[290]</sup>

Children, born at Boston:

1. *Sarah*<sup>5</sup> *Lobdell*, b. 19 Nov. 1710;<sup>[291]</sup> possibly the Sarah who m. at King's Chapel 21 May 1736, *Laurence Clee*.<sup>[292]</sup> The marriage of a Lawrence Clee and Lydia Hawkins at Boston was forbidden 23 Apr. 1736.<sup>[293]</sup>
  2. *Isaac Lobdell*, b. 6 July 1715; d. Philadelphia 30 8<sup>th</sup> mo. [Oct.] 1773, age 58; m. at the Friends Meeting, Philadelphia, Penn. 14 June 1744, *Rebecca Cresson*,<sup>[294]</sup> b. 27 Aug. 1713; d. Philadelphia 7 June 1794, age 80, daughter of Solomon and Anna (Watson) Cresson. By his will, dated 20 8<sup>th</sup> mo. [Oct.] 1773, Isaac Lobdell of Philadelphia, carpenter, made bequests to his wife Rebecca and his three children Samuel, Hannah, and Elizabeth, and named his wife and children Samuel and Hannah, executors. He also appointed his friend Thomas Say as guardian of his youngest daughter.<sup>[295]</sup>
  3. *Samuel Lobdell*, bp. New South Church, Boston 9 Apr. 1721.<sup>[296]</sup>
- vii. JOHN BRISCOE (again), b. 2 July 1689;<sup>[297]</sup> d. Boston 2 July 1690.<sup>[298]</sup>

<sup>282</sup> *Boston births from 1700 to 1800* [note 200], 194.

<sup>283</sup> Appleton, *Boston Births, Baptisms, Marriages, and Deaths, 1630–1699* [note 6], 162.

<sup>284</sup> *Ibid.*, 168.

<sup>285</sup> Records of the Friends Meeting, Philadelphia; thanks to Sandra M. Hewlett, C.G., Wayne, Penn., for sharing this and other records of this Lobdell family.

<sup>286</sup> *Boston marriages from 1700 to 1751* [note 186], 24.

<sup>287</sup> *Register* 153 (2000):423.

<sup>288</sup> St. Kitts, in the Leeward Islands of the Caribbean.

<sup>289</sup> *American Weekly Mercury* [Philadelphia], Thurs., 23 May to 30 May 1723, 2; and Thurs., 30 Apr. to 7 May 1724, 2.

<sup>290</sup> *Ibid.*, Thurs., 12 May to 19 May 1726, 2; Thurs., 25 Aug. to 1 Sept. 1726, 2.

<sup>291</sup> *Boston births from 1700 to 1800* [note 200], 69.

<sup>292</sup> *Boston marriages from 1700 to 1751* [note 186], 224 (intention 15 Dec. 1735), 328; "Records of the Churches of Boston" [note 159], King's Chapel, 343.

<sup>293</sup> *Boston marriages from 1700 to 1751* [note 186], 224.

<sup>294</sup> Anna Miller Watring, *Early Quaker Records of Philadelphia* (Westminster, Md.: Family Line Publications, 1997–98), 1:110.

<sup>295</sup> Philadelphia Co. Orphan's Court, Will Book P:449, #317 [FSL film 21,727, Image 243 of 594].

<sup>296</sup> "Records of the Churches of Boston" [note 159], New South Church, 9. The record reads: "Sam<sup>l</sup> Son of Sarah Lobdell."

<sup>297</sup> Appleton, *Boston Births, Baptisms, Marriages, and Deaths, 1630–1699* [note 6], 183.

<sup>298</sup> *Ibid.*, 192.

viii. ELIZABETH BRISCOE, b. 24 June 1691;<sup>[299]</sup> m. at Boston 13 Oct. 1709, by Rev. Ebenezer Pemberton,<sup>[300]</sup> RICHARD HALL, b. 31 Jan. 1682/83, son of Richard and Elizabeth (Hemenway) (Holbrook) Hall.<sup>[301]</sup> He was one of the bakers along with Joseph Briscoe Sr. and Jr. who on 10 Dec. 1713, were ordered by the Boston selectmen to bake a delivery of wheat into bread. He was allocated 50 bushels.<sup>[302]</sup> He was elected a member of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company in 1707.<sup>[303]</sup> On 14 Mar. 1708/9, he was chosen to be one of the town constables.<sup>[304]</sup> On 7 Oct. 1717, Richard Hall was given liberty “to dig open the Highway and so through to Dock Square for laying” a cellar drain. He lived on King (now State) St.

On 15 Apr. 1718, having changed his business, he petitioned the selectmen for a license to sell strong drink, as an innholder, at a tenement of Simeon Stoddard’s in Cornhill (now part of Washington St.). His application as an innholder was disallowed, as it also was in 1719. On 15 July 1719, his petition for license to keep a “common victuallin” house and coffee-house, at his house “nigh the town-house in King Street,” was allowed, which was regranted in 1720. Having been repeatedly refused an innholder’s license, he petitioned again on 29 July 1723, saying, “that he may be further indulged with a license for a trial of his behavior, and promising to observe the good and wholesome laws of the Province and take especial care to prevent all disorders,” etc. The license was granted but refused the next year. On 5 July 1728, his last application to retail strong drink in “Maulboro” St. (now part of Washington St.), was disallowed. For one year, 1722–23, he occupied part of the cellar of the town-house paying £9 per annum.

By a deed dated 14 Mar. 1725, Mary Norton of Hingham, widow, sold for £450 to Richard Hall of Boston, baker, a bakehouse with utensils on the south side of School St. in Boston.<sup>[305]</sup> On 16 Apr. 1728, he mortgaged the same for £500 to John Green of Boston, cooper.<sup>[306]</sup> By his will, dated 19 Apr. 1744 and proved 3 July 1744, Richard Hall of Boston, gentleman, made the following bequests: to his sons John, George, Richard, William and Charles, two shillings each. To daughter Constance Woodhouse, five shillings. To son James, his wearing apparel. The remainder of his estate was bequeathed to son James Hall and daughter Mary Hall to be equally divided; daughter Constance was to have a share if they agree.

<sup>299</sup> *Ibid.*, 195.

<sup>300</sup> *Boston marriages from 1700 to 1751* [note 186], 23.

<sup>301</sup> *Vital Records of Roxbury, Massachusetts, to the End of the Year 1849*, 2 vols. (Salem, Mass.: Essex Institute, 1925–1926), 1:163.

<sup>302</sup> *A report of the Record Commissioners of the City of Boston containing the records of Boston selectmen, 1701 to 1715* (Boston: Rockwell and Churchill, City Printers, 1884) [Boston Record Commissioners, vol. 11], 197.

<sup>303</sup> Roberts, *History of the Military Company* [note 171], 1:361.

<sup>304</sup> *Boston records from 1700 to 1728* [note 171], 60.

<sup>305</sup> Suffolk Co. Deeds, 39:200, recorded 5 Apr. 1726.

<sup>306</sup> *Ibid.*, 42:108–09, recorded 3 May 1728. Richard’s wife Elizabeth also signed the mortgage deed.

He named his children James Hall and Mary Hall and his friend Mr. John Box executors.<sup>[307]</sup>

Children, born at Boston:

1. *Constance*<sup>5</sup> *Hall*, m. at Boston 12 July 1726,<sup>[308]</sup> *William Woodhouse*. On 2 Mar. 1753, letters of administration on the estate of William Woodhouse, late of his Majesty's Castle William, were granted to his son William Woodhouse of Milton, with Samuel Henshaw Jr. and Brinsmead Hunt, both of Milton, as sureties. An inventory listed personal items valued at £22 17s 10d.<sup>[309]</sup>
  2. *James Hall*, b. 1712; m. at Boston 11 May 1749, by John Phillips Esq., J.P., *Mary Lincoln* "both of Hingham."<sup>[310]</sup>
  3. *Richard Hall*, b. 9 Sept. 1712.<sup>[311]</sup> A Richard Hall m. at Boston 7 Nov. 1735, by Rev. John Webb, *Martha Williston*.<sup>[312]</sup>
  4. *Joseph Hall*, b. 3 Dec. 1713<sup>[313]</sup> (not in father's will).
  5. *Mary Hall*, b. 1716.
  6. *John Hall*, b. 24 Apr. 1716.<sup>[314]</sup>
  7. *George Hall*, b. 1718.
  8. *Elizabeth Hall*, b. 6 June 1718<sup>[315]</sup> (not in father's will).
  9. *William Hall*. A William Hall m. at Trinity Church, Boston 21 Oct. 1751, *Elisabeth Davis*.<sup>[316]</sup>
  10. *Charles Hall*, b. 1725.
  11. *Joseph Hall*, b. 11 July 1725.<sup>[317]</sup>
- ix. SUSANAH BRISCOE, b. 15 Apr. 1693;<sup>[318]</sup> bp. Old South Church 16 Apr. 1694;<sup>[319]</sup> m. at Boston 10 Dec. 1719, by Rev. Mr. Sam[uel] Miles, Presbyterian minister,<sup>[320]</sup> ROBERT KENTON. He was initiated into St. John's Masonic Lodge, Boston, on 4 Sept. 1734.<sup>[321]</sup> On 13 Oct. 1740, his petition to sell strong drink as a retailer on Queen St. was disallowed.<sup>[322]</sup> King's Chapel burial records list a Robert Kenton, 6 June 1743; another 24 Oct. 1745; and a Susanna Kenton, 21 Nov. 1745.<sup>[323]</sup>

Children, born at Boston:

<sup>307</sup> Suffolk Co. Probate, file 8091.

<sup>308</sup> *Boston marriages from 1700 to 1751* [note 186], 136

<sup>309</sup> Suffolk Co. Probate, file 10352.

<sup>310</sup> *Boston marriages from 1700 to 1751* [note 186], 250.

<sup>311</sup> *Boston births from 1700 to 1800* [note 200], 83.

<sup>312</sup> *Boston marriages from 1700 to 1751* [note 186], 191.

<sup>313</sup> *Boston births from 1700 to 1800* [note 200], 91.

<sup>314</sup> *Ibid.*, 114.

<sup>315</sup> *Ibid.*, 129.

<sup>316</sup> *Boston marriages from 1700 to 1751* [note 186], 345.

<sup>317</sup> *Boston births from 1700 to 1800* [note 200], 171.

<sup>318</sup> Appleton, *Boston Births, Baptisms, Marriages, and Deaths, 1630–1699* [note 6], 205.

<sup>319</sup> "Records of the Churches of Boston" [note 159], Old South Church, 124.

<sup>320</sup> *Boston marriages from 1700 to 1751* [note 186], 82.

<sup>321</sup> "Massachusetts: Grand Lodge of Masons Membership Cards, 1733–1990," *AmericanAncestors.org*.

<sup>322</sup> *A report of the Record Commissioners of the City of Boston containing the Boston town records, 1742 to 1757* (Boston: Rockwell and Churchill, City Printers, 1885) [Boston Record Commissioners, vol. 14], 255. Queen St. is now Court St.

<sup>323</sup> "Records of the Churches of Boston" [note 159], King's Chapel, 251–52.

1. *Mary*<sup>5</sup> *Kenton*, b. 30 Mar. 1722;<sup>[324]</sup> m. at Boston 22 July 1746, by Rev. Thomas Prince, *John Ledyard* or *Lyddiard* of Boston, shipwright,<sup>[325]</sup> bp. Old South Church 21 June 1725, son of Nicholas and Mary (Elkins) Lyddiard.<sup>[326]</sup> On 25 Aug. 1746, the petition of Mary Ledyard to sell strong drink at her house on Purchase St. was disallowed.<sup>[327]</sup> One Mary Lydiard m. at Boston 12 July 1764, Joel Smith.<sup>[328]</sup>
  2. *Robert Kenton*, bp. King's Chapel in Dec. 1723.<sup>[329]</sup> He belonged to his Majesty's ship *Chester* but was a twine spinner in Boston at the time of his death. He d. by 8 Sept. 1749 when administration was granted to his brother-in-law John Lyddiard of Boston, shipwright, who gave £100 bond.<sup>[330]</sup>
  3. *John Kenton*, b. 11 Dec. 1724.<sup>[331]</sup>
  4. *Susannah Kenton*, b. 14 Dec. 1726;<sup>[332]</sup> m. (int.) at Boston 18 Jan. 1745, *Edmund Walmough*.<sup>[333]</sup>
- x. MARY BRISCOE, b. 7 Apr. 1695;<sup>[334]</sup> d. 4 Apr. 1712; bur. 7 Apr. 1712.<sup>[335]</sup>
- xi. MARTHA BRISCOE, b. 26 Nov. 1697;<sup>[336]</sup> m. at Boston 7 Oct. 1720, by Rev. Mr. Joseph Sewall, THOMAS POWELL.<sup>[337]</sup>

Children, born at Boston:

1. *Thomas*<sup>5</sup> *Powell*, b. 11 Apr. 1721; d young.
2. *Thomas Powell* (again), b. 5 Dec. 1724; d. Boston 25 Dec. 1795, age 71;<sup>[338]</sup> bur. the following day from Trinity Church;<sup>[339]</sup> He was a rigger, and lived on Sea St., just west of present-day South Station. He m. (1) Trinity Church 17 Sept. 1745, *Elizabeth Calem*,<sup>[340]</sup> b. ca. 1726, bur. from Trinity Church, 22 Nov. 1768, age 42;<sup>[341]</sup> m.

<sup>324</sup> *Boston births from 1700 to 1800* [note 200], 156.

<sup>325</sup> *Boston marriages from 1700 to 1751* [note 186], 252.

<sup>326</sup> "Records of the Churches of Boston" [note 159], Old South Church, 164.

<sup>327</sup> *A report of the Record Commissioners of the City of Boston containing the selectmen's minutes from 1742 to 1753* (Boston: Rockwell and Churchill, City Printers, 1887) [Boston Record Commissioners, vol. 17], 143.

<sup>328</sup> *Boston marriages from 1752 to 1809* [note 249], 398.

<sup>329</sup> "Records of the Churches of Boston" [note 159], King's Chapel, 12.

<sup>330</sup> Suffolk Co. Probate, file 9355.

<sup>331</sup> *Boston births from 1700 to 1800* [note 200], 166.

<sup>332</sup> *Ibid.*, 177.

<sup>333</sup> *Boston marriages from 1700 to 1751* [note 186], 281.

<sup>334</sup> Appleton, *Boston Births, Baptisms, Marriages, and Deaths, 1630-1699* [note 6], 221.

<sup>335</sup> Dunkle and Lainhart, *Deaths in Boston 1700-1799* [note 190], 120.

<sup>336</sup> Appleton, *Boston Births, Baptisms, Marriages, and Deaths, 1630-1699* [note 6], 232.

<sup>337</sup> *Boston marriages from 1700 to 1751* [note 186], 89.

<sup>338</sup> Dunkle and Lainhart, *Deaths in Boston 1700-1799* [note 190], 733; Ann Smith Lainhart, ed., *First Boston city directory (1789) including extensive annotations by John Haven Dexter (1791-1876)* (Boston: NEHGS, 1989), 81; *Columbian Centinel*, Sat., 26 Dec. 1795, 3, col. 1.

<sup>339</sup> Oliver and Peabody, *Records of Trinity Church* [note 242], 2:810.

<sup>340</sup> *Ibid.*, 2:716.

<sup>341</sup> *Ibid.*, 2:781.

(2) Trinity Church 25 June 1769, *Judith Norman*,<sup>[342]</sup> b. ca. 1738, bur. from Trinity Church 28 Nov. 1782, age 45.<sup>[343]</sup>

xii. HANNAH BRISCOE, b. 27 Nov. 1700,<sup>[344]</sup> no further record found.

**9. WILLIAM<sup>3</sup> BRISCOE** (*Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>, Guy<sup>A</sup>, Edward<sup>B</sup>, Guy<sup>C</sup>*) was born at Boston 7 April 1663.<sup>[345]</sup> He married (1) **RACHEL** (\_\_\_), born *circa* 1688, who was buried 19 October 1715, age 27.<sup>[346]</sup> She is buried in Granary Burying Ground, Boston.<sup>[347]</sup> He married (2) at Boston 18 May 1717, by Mr. Samuel Miles, Presbyterian minister, **SARAH FARE**.<sup>[348]</sup> William does not appear as a grantor or grantee in Suffolk County, and there was no probate on his estate.

Child of William<sup>3</sup> and Rachel (\_\_\_) Briscoe, born at Boston:

- i. RUTH<sup>4</sup> BRISCOE, bp. Kings Chapel 2 Oct. 1715;<sup>[349]</sup> d. Boston Oct. 1792, age 77;<sup>[350]</sup> m. at New South Church, Boston 15 June 1742,<sup>[351]</sup> SAMUEL SMALLEDGE, b. Boston 16 Sept. 1720, son of William<sup>2</sup> (*William<sup>1</sup>*) and Ruth (Story) Smalledge. He was a mariner, and was living on 18 Mar. 1767 when he was defendant in a suit brought by Samuel Adams of Boston, gentleman. The Boston constable was not able to find him.<sup>[352]</sup> He was baptized at the New South Church on 3 Aug. 1740 and was admitted to full communion on 24 July 1743.<sup>[353]</sup>

Children, baptized at the New South Church:<sup>[354]</sup>

1. *Ruth<sup>5</sup> Smalledge*, b. 20 July 1743; bp. 24 July 1743; probably the Ruth who m. 17 July 1763, *Joseph Wadsworth Barrett* of Boston.<sup>[355]</sup>
2. *Rachel Smalledge*, bp. 16 June 1745; m. at Boston 26 Apr. 1763,<sup>[356]</sup> *Joseph Payson*.<sup>[357]</sup>
3. *Elizabeth Smalledge*, bp. 28 Dec. 1746; probably the Elizabeth who m. at Boston 5 June 1774, *Joseph Winslow Powell*.<sup>[358]</sup>
4. *William Smalledge*, bp. 6 Aug. 1749.

<sup>342</sup> *Ibid.*, 2:730.

<sup>343</sup> *Ibid.*, 2:795.

<sup>344</sup> *Boston births from 1700 to 1800* [note 200], 1.

<sup>345</sup> Appleton, *Boston Births, Baptisms, Marriages, and Deaths, 1630–1699* [note 6], 87.

<sup>346</sup> Dunkle and Lainhart, *Deaths in Boston 1700–1799* [note 190], 120.

<sup>347</sup> Robert J. Dunkle and Ann S. Lainhart, *Inscriptions and Records of The Old Cemeteries of Boston* (Boston: NEHGS, 2000), 545; *FindAGrave.com*, memorial #20462627.

<sup>348</sup> *Boston marriages from 1700 to 1751* [note 186], 68.

<sup>349</sup> “Records of the Churches of Boston” [note 159], Kings Chapel, 7.

<sup>350</sup> Dunkle and Lainhart, *Deaths in Boston 1700–1799* [note 190], 833.

<sup>351</sup> *Boston marriages from 1700 to 1751* [note 186], 345; “Records of the Churches of Boston” [note 159], New South Church, 91.

<sup>352</sup> Suffolk Court Files, #87651 [FSL film 925,068 images 684–686 of 771].

<sup>353</sup> George Walter Chamberlain, “Smallege,” call no. SG SMA 5, R. Stanton Avery Special Collections, NEHGS, Boston.

<sup>354</sup> “Records of the Churches of Boston” [note 159], New South Church, 34, 37, 39, 45, 47, 51.

<sup>355</sup> *Boston marriages from 1752 to 1809* [note 249], 380.

<sup>356</sup> *Ibid.*, 380.

<sup>357</sup> Maureen Markt Dearborn, “Four Contemporary Men Named Joseph Payson in Massachusetts in 1773,” *Register* 175 (2021):135–138 at 135.

<sup>358</sup> *Boston marriages from 1752 to 1809* [note 249], 382.

5. *Samuel Smalledge*, bp. 21 June 1752; d. young.
6. *Samuel Smalledge* (again), bp. 26 May 1754; d. Boston 8 July 1789, age 35. He was a cooper.<sup>[359]</sup> He m. (int.) at Boston 14 Jan. 1779, *Elizabeth Tucker*.<sup>[360]</sup>
7. *Mary Smalledge*, bp. 19 Feb. 1758; m. at Boston 7 Jan. 1772, *George Craft*.<sup>[361]</sup>

**10. JOSEPH<sup>4</sup> BRISCOE** (*Joseph*<sup>3-2</sup>, *William*<sup>1</sup>, *Guy*<sup>A</sup>, *Edward*<sup>B</sup>, *Guy*<sup>C</sup>) was born at Boston 8 January 1682.<sup>[362]</sup> He married at Boston, by Rev. Cotton Mather 21 January 1702, **MARIAH ROBIE**,<sup>[363]</sup> born at Boston 19 October 1687 and baptized in the Second Church 23 October 1687, daughter of William and Elizabeth (Greenough) Robie.<sup>[364]</sup>

Like his father, Joseph was a baker. He became a member of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company in 1703.<sup>[365]</sup>

On 10 December 1713, on the arrival of 400 bushels of wheat in Boston, the selectmen ordered 50 bushels to be delivered to Joseph Briscoe Sr. and 20 bushels to Joseph Briscoe Jr. "to bake the same into bread."<sup>[366]</sup> Joseph was a tithingman in 1711 and 1718 and a member of the Boston militia.<sup>[367]</sup> His house stood at the southwest corner Washington and Bromfield streets,<sup>[368]</sup> but was the property of Samuel Sewall of Boston, Esq. on 19 March 1702/3 when Sewall conveyed the house and land to his son Samuel Jr.<sup>[369]</sup> Joseph was still living there on 7 September 1724 when Sewall conveyed the property to Benjamin Alford of Boston.<sup>[370]</sup> On 7 July 1727, Joseph petitioned the selectmen and received permission to sell strong drink on Marlborough (now Washington) St.<sup>[371]</sup> Joseph Brisco of Queen (now Court) St. was one of several people granted licenses by the Boston selectmen to sell strong drink, 28 September 1739.<sup>[372]</sup>

<sup>359</sup> Dunkle and Lainhart, *Deaths in Boston 1700–1799* [note 190], 833.

<sup>360</sup> *Boston marriages from 1752 to 1809* [note 249], 442.

<sup>361</sup> *Ibid.*, 381.

<sup>362</sup> Savage, *Genealogical dictionary of New England* [note 112], 1:256.

<sup>363</sup> *Boston marriages from 1700 to 1751* [note 186], 3.

<sup>364</sup> Appleton, *Boston Births, Baptisms, Marriages, and Deaths, 1630–1699* [note 6], 176; "Records of the Churches of Boston" [note 159], Second Church, 165.

<sup>365</sup> Zachariah G. Whitman, *The history of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company from its formation in 1637 and charter in 1638, to the present time; comprising the biographies of the distinguished civil, literary, religious, and military men of the colony, province, and commonwealth* (Boston: J.H. Eastburn, Printer, 1842), 248; Roberts, *History of the Military Company* [note 171], 1:350.

<sup>366</sup> *Records of Boston selectmen, 1701 to 1715* [note 302], 197.

<sup>367</sup> Roberts, *History of the Military Company* [note 171], 1:350.

<sup>368</sup> *Boston records from 1700 to 1728* [note 171], 50.

<sup>369</sup> Suffolk Co. Deeds, 21:242, recorded 17 Apr. 1703.

<sup>370</sup> *Ibid.*, 38:15, recorded 22 Sept. 1724.

<sup>371</sup> *A report of the Record Commissioners of the City of Boston containing the records of Boston selectmen, 1716 to 1736* (Boston: Rockwell and Churchill, City Printers, 1885) [Boston Record Commissioners, vol. 13], 165.

<sup>372</sup> *A report of the Record Commissioners of the City of Boston containing the records of Boston selectmen, 1736 to 1742* (Boston: Rockwell and Churchill, City Printers, 1886) [Boston Record Commissioners, vol. 15], 202.



Children of Joseph<sup>4</sup> and Mariah (Robie) Briscoe, born at Boston:

- i. MARY<sup>5</sup> BRISCOE, b. 23 Aug. 1705;<sup>[373]</sup> d. 28 Aug. 1706; bur. 30 Aug. 1706.<sup>[374]</sup>
- ii. JOSEPH BRISCOE, b. 29 May 1708.<sup>[375]</sup> A Joseph Brisco m. at the New South Church, Boston, 1 October 1731, by Rev. Samuel Checkley, REBECCA CHAMBERLAIN.<sup>[376]</sup> He may be the Joseph Briscoe who m. at Trinity Church, Boston 24 Aug. 1752, REBECCA MARTIN.<sup>[377]</sup>
- iii. MARY BRISCOE (again), b. 20 June 1710;<sup>[378]</sup> probably the Mary Brisco who m. (int.) at Boston 16 May 1729,<sup>[379]</sup> JOHN COWELL, who d. at Boston 22 July 1746.<sup>[380]</sup> By a deed dated 12 Dec. 1733, John Cowell of Boston, wheelwright, and Mary his wife, sold for £550 to Thomas Greene of Boston, merchant, a house and land with 17 feet of frontage on Newbury (now Washington) St. extending to the training field or common (at present-day Tremont St.).<sup>[381]</sup> The following day, he bought another parcel of land on the west side of present-day Washington St. south of Boylston St. for £220 from Thomas Foster and Joseph Russell of Boston.<sup>[382]</sup> After erecting a house on the premises, he sold it with an adjacent strip of land for £531 14s to David Collson, leather dresser of Boston, by deed dated 25 Apr. 1735.<sup>[383]</sup> In his last deed, dated 18 May 1744, John and Mary took out a mortgage against their house and land on the north side of Bennet St., Boston for £50 to Thomas Greene of Boston, merchant.<sup>[384]</sup> Mary's date of death is unknown.<sup>[385]</sup>

Known children, born at Boston:

1. Elizabeth<sup>6</sup> Cowell, b. 4 June 1730.<sup>[386]</sup>

<sup>373</sup> *Boston births from 1700 to 1800* [note 200], 33.

<sup>374</sup> Dunkle and Lainhart, *Deaths in Boston 1700–1799* [note 190], 120.

<sup>375</sup> *Boston births from 1700 to 1800* [note 200], 54.

<sup>376</sup> *Boston marriages from 1700 to 1751* [note 186], 170; “Records of the Churches of Boston” [note 159], New South Church, 88.

<sup>377</sup> “Records of the Churches of Boston” [note 159], Trinity Church, 174.

<sup>378</sup> *Boston births from 1700 to 1800* [note 200], 24:66.

<sup>379</sup> *Boston marriages from 1700 to 1751* [note 186], 116.

<sup>380</sup> Dunkle and Lainhart, *Deaths in Boston 1700–1799* [note 190], 221.

<sup>381</sup> Suffolk Co. Deeds, 48:30–31, recorded 24 Dec. 1733.

<sup>382</sup> *Ibid.*, 48:122, recorded 18 Feb. 1733[1/4].

<sup>383</sup> *Ibid.*, 55:58–59, recorded 22 Aug. 1737.

<sup>384</sup> *Ibid.*, 68:147–149, recorded 25 May 1744. Tufts Medical Center now occupies this site.

<sup>385</sup> Mary (Briscoe) Cowell should not be confused with Mary (Stetson) Cowell who also lived in Boston's South End in the mid-1700s. The latter was a daughter of Joshua<sup>2</sup> (*Thomas<sup>2</sup>, Robert<sup>1</sup>*) and Sarah (\_\_\_) Stetson, and m. at Newport, R.I. 13 Jan. 1726, Joseph Cowell (Oscar Frank Stetson, ed., *The descendants of Cornet Robert Stetson of Scituate, Massachusetts sixteen hundred and thirty-four* [Providence, R.I.: Stetson Kindred of America, Inc., 1933], 42). By a deed dated 28 Sept. 1769, Mary Cowell of Boston, widow, sold for £116 13s 4d to Nathaniel Shepard of Boston, a parcel of land in the south end of Boston on the east side of Orange (now Washington) St. that her late father, Joshua Stetson, bought by deed dated 19 Sept. 1737 (Suffolk Co. Deeds, 115:217–218, recorded 5 Oct. 1769). This land is within a few blocks of the home of Mary [Briscoe] Cowell). Mary (Stetson) Cowell is probably the Mary Cowell, widow, who d. Boston 8 Oct. 1770, age 61 (Dunkle and Lainhart, *Deaths in Boston 1700–1799* [note 190], 221). She left a will, dated 22 June 1770 and proved 26 Oct. 1770, by which she left 5s each to her two grandchildren Joseph and Mary Cowell when they reached the age of 21, and the remainder of her estate to her daughter Sarah Cowell whom she named sole executrix (Suffolk Co. Probate, file 14809).

<sup>386</sup> *Boston births from 1700 to 1800* [note 200], 196.

2. Mary Cowell, b. 8 July 1732.<sup>[387]</sup>

iv. REBECCA BRISCOE, b. 18 Feb 1713;<sup>[388]</sup> no further record found.

### Appendix: The Early Pedigree of the Lords of Crofton

For decades, genealogists have relied on the Brisko pedigree in *The Visitation of the County of Cumberland in the Year 1615* to trace armigers in Hertfordshire and elsewhere, as well as Dr. John Briscoe, an emigrant to Maryland in 1634.<sup>[389]</sup> As before mentioned, it proposes the following lineage for Guy<sup>C</sup> of Westward: Edward<sup>D</sup>, Robert<sup>E</sup>, Christopher<sup>F</sup>, Isold<sup>G</sup>, Robert<sup>H</sup>, Jordan<sup>I</sup>, Allan<sup>J</sup>, Robert<sup>K</sup>.<sup>[390]</sup> The manuscript source for the Visitation pedigree is Harleian MS. 1536, a copy in the handwriting of Richard Mundy from an original that was missing from the College of Arms.<sup>[391]</sup> Mundy's pedigree clearly incorporates outside information. Most obviously, it describes William Brisko, heir apparent of the holder of the arms in 1615, as "a student in Lincolns Inn 1629."<sup>[392]</sup>

In addition, the earlier part of the pedigree, possibly adapted from the manuscript history of Cumberland by John Denton,<sup>[393]</sup> exhibits several inconsistencies, both internally and as compared with Denton. Biographical information is given only for the second Robert, Isold, and Christopher in Mundy's notes on the pedigree.<sup>[394]</sup>

\* This Matilda, wiffe of Robert sonn of Jordan, Released hir dower and ffeoffment to John Brisko sonn of Robert in the 6 yeare of King Edward the 2d as appereth by the said Release mad to the sayd John.

† This Isold Brisko by the mariage of the daughter and heire of Crofton Cam to the mannor of Crofton Whinno and Dundrawin in the County of Cumberland

<sup>387</sup> Ibid., 207.

<sup>388</sup> Ibid., 89. "daughter of Joseph and Mary."

<sup>389</sup> Fetherston, *Visitation of the County of Cumberland* [note 22], 11–12; The Society of the Ark and the Dove, *The Ark and the Dove Adventurers*, George Ely Russell and Donna Valley Russell, eds. (Baltimore: Genealogical Publishing Co., Inc., 2005), 18; William S. Pye and Mrs. William S. (Annie Etheldra Briscoe) Pye, "The John Briscoe Story," *National Genealogical Society Quarterly* 46 (1958): 120–127, esp. 120.

<sup>390</sup> Fetherston, *Visitation of the County of Cumberland* [note 22], 11.

<sup>391</sup> Ibid., v.

<sup>392</sup> Ibid., 12. William matriculated at Queen's College, Oxford, on 12 Dec. 1623, age 17, was a barrister at law in Lincoln's Inn in 1634, and later served as a member of Parliament (Foster, *Alumni Oxonienses* [note 33], 1:183).

<sup>393</sup> John Denton, *An Accompt of the Most Considerable Estates and Families in the County of Cumberland, from the Conquest unto the Beginning of the Reign of K. James [the First]*, Cumberland and Westmorland Antiquarian and Archæological Society, Tract Series, no. 2, R. S. Ferguson, ed. (Kendal: T. Wilson, 1887), 83–86. Denton's work was first compiled about 1610 but circulated exclusively in manuscript prior to this publication. His treatment of the Brisko family is also quoted extensively in William Hutchinson, *The History of the County of Cumberland, and Some Places Adjacent, from the Earliest Accounts to the Present Time . . .*, 2 vols. (Carlisle: Printed by F. Jollie, 1794), 2:457–460. However, Denton's work was not universally respected in the nineteenth century (Denton, *Accompt*, i–ii, from introduction by R. S. Ferguson).

<sup>394</sup> All of the following quotations are from Fetherston, *Visitation of the County of Cumberland* [note 22], 11.

ffor yt [that] Sr John Crofton marid Margerett Daughter & heire of Sr Gilbert Whinno Knt. as appereth by a deed in the Raigne of King Richard the Second.

‡ it dooth apere by an order of Arbitterment Between the Prior of Carlisle & Christopher Brisko ffor the mannor of Brisko yt [that] the sayd mannor being at that time in Controversie for the some of on[e] hundre<sup>th</sup> markes then payed should Remayne w<sup>th</sup> the Prior and his successors & the Capitall messuage w<sup>th</sup> graunt of woods ffor Building should Remayne w<sup>th</sup>e the said Xyofer [Christopher] and his heirs ffor euer it is ffound in ould noates the said Xyofer kept 14<sup>o</sup> souldiers at Brisko thorne uppon Eske the sayd Xyopher was taken prisner at the Burning of Wigton uppon these occasions hee was forced to morgage the most part of his lands.<sup>[395]</sup>

Denton does not place Isold Brisko as a younger son of Robert and Matilda. Denton instead describes Isold as John's successor, not necessarily a son or brother. There are at least two ways to interpret Mundy's statement that Isold's marriage is documented by a deed of *temp.* Richard II (1377–1399). It might mean either that this is when the marriage took place, or that it was merely recited then, in a conveyance that need not have passed in Isold's lifetime.<sup>[396]</sup>

For his part, F. J. Field in *An Armorial for Cumberland* interprets these statements in the former sense, giving a date of ca. 1390 for the Brisko–Crofton marriage.<sup>[397]</sup> Unfortunately, each solution presents a different chronological challenge. On one hand, the younger son of a man whose elder son was already of age by 1313 was unlikely to marry as late as 1377 or later. Accepting that date for Isold's marriage would seem to rule out his placement as a son of Robert and Matilda. On the other hand, the only occasion on which Wigton was said to be burned is in the raid led by Robert the Bruce, King of Scots, that also resulted in the destruction of Holme Cultram Abbey in 1322.<sup>[398]</sup> In order for Christopher to be the lord of Brisko in that year, his parents must have been contemporaries of John, Robert, and Matilda. However, if Guy<sup>C</sup>, his proposed great-grandson, was born closer to 1500, such an early dating of Christopher's tenure would seem to require stretching just four generations of births over about 200 years. Either alternative would suggest that there may be generations missing from the pedigree.

<sup>395</sup> A more extended summary of what appears to be the same arbitrament was included in a 1687 manuscript copy of Denton's history by William Gilpin of Scaleby Castle, and printed in Denton, *Accompt*, 84 n. \*. According to Gilpin, the document was then in the possession of John Brisko, Esq., but the prior and witnesses—by which the document might have been dated—also were not named in Gilpin's summary.

<sup>396</sup> Fetherston, *Visitation of the County of Cumberland* [note 22], 11 n. †, quoted above in full. No other details of this purported instrument are given. Denton's language is more ambiguous: "Isold Brisko who married Margaret one of the daughters and heirs of Sir John de Crofton Knt, temp. Ric. 2<sup>nd</sup>" (Denton, *Accompt*, 85).

<sup>397</sup> Field, *Armorial for Cumberland* [note 23], 96.

<sup>398</sup> Samuel Lewis, *A Topographical Dictionary of England . . .*, 7th ed., 4 vols. (London: S. Lewis and Co., 1848), 4:574; Hutchinson, *History of the County of Cumberland* [note 393], 2:480.

As above noticed, men whose names fit the pedigree appear infrequently in printed calendars of medieval records.<sup>[399]</sup> This limited evidence base makes it difficult to validate the earlier part of the pedigree, including the four generations of male descendants given for Guy<sup>C</sup>'s grandparents, Robert and Isabell (Dykes) Brisko—a depth of detail on the cadets that is unusual in a Visitation pedigree. The claimants of the same arms in other Visitations can ultimately be traced to Robert and Isabell.<sup>[400]</sup> Unfortunately, the existence of this family has not been substantiated independently of the Visitation pedigrees.

Children of Robert<sup>E2</sup> and Isabell (Dykes) Brisko, as claimed in the 1615 Visitation of Cumberland, are:<sup>[401]</sup>

- i. ROBERT<sup>D2</sup> BRISKO, son and heir, m. CATHERINE SKELTON, daughter and sole heiress of Clement Skelton of Pettrell Wray, Cumberland; proposed ancestors of John<sup>1</sup> Briscoe, immigrant to Maryland on the *Ark* and *Dove*, 1634.<sup>[402]</sup>
- ii. ALEXANDER BRISKO, second son. His sons were:
  1. *Robert Brisko* of Emondbridge.
  2. *William Brisko*, ancestor of the Brisko family of Yarwell, Northampton. In 1618 Walter Brisko of Westminster, William's great-grandson, differenced the arms with a *Crescent gules on a martlet Or*.<sup>[403]</sup>
- iii. EDWARD<sup>D2</sup> BRISKO, of Westward; proposed ancestor of William<sup>1</sup> Briscoe of Boston.
- iv. THOMAS BRISKO, a priest.

<sup>399</sup> A possible candidate for Guy<sup>C</sup>'s grandfather is the Robert Briscowe of Cumberland who served as a mainpinner for two crown defendants, once in 1392 and once in 1403 (*Calendar of the Close Rolls Preserved in the Public Record Office . . . Richard II*, vol. 5 [London: HMSO, 1925], 103; *Calendar of the Close Rolls Preserved in the Public Record Office . . . Henry IV*, vol. 2 [London: HMSO, 1929], 279–280). This Robert could also be the one granted a chantry in mortmain from the king at Ronhale, co. Bedford, with William Saxy of Essex, but this grant was annulled by 5 May 1401 (*Calendar of the Fine Rolls, Preserved in the Public Record Office*, vol. XII [London: HMSO, 1931], 132). Although Guy's grandfather was also supposed to be the lord of Crofton, there are no known rolls describing this Robert as such.

<sup>400</sup> Fetherston, *Visitation of the County of Cumberland* [note 22], 11–12; Metcalfe, *Visitations of Hertfordshire* [note 18], 31; George John Armytage, ed., *The Visitation of the County of Rutland in the Year 1618–19, Taken by William Camden, Clarenceux King of Arms, and Other Descents of Families Not in the Visitation*, Publications of the Harleian Society, vol. 3 (London: Harleian Society, 1870), 33; Walter C. Metcalfe, ed., *The Visitations of Essex by Hawley, 1552; Hervey, 1558; Cooke, 1570; Raven, 1612; and Owen and Lilly, 1634 . . .*, Publications of the Harleian Society, vols. 13, 14, 2 vols. (London: Mitchell and Hughes, 1878), 1:496; Joseph Jackson Howard and Joseph Lemuel Chester, eds., *The Visitation of London, Anno Domini 1633, 1634, and 1635, Made by Sr. Henry St. George, Kt., Richmond Herald, and Deputy and Marshal to Sr. Richard St. George, Kt., Clarenceux Herald*, Publications of the Harleian Society, vol. 15 (London: Mitchell and Hughes, 1880), 103; Walter C. Metcalfe, ed., *The Visitations of Northamptonshire Made in 1564 and 1618–19, with Northamptonshire Pedigrees; from Various Harleian Mss.* (London: Mitchell and Hughes, 1887), 71.

<sup>401</sup> Fetherston, *Visitation of the County of Cumberland* [note 22], 11–12.

<sup>402</sup> According to Fetherston, *Visitation of the County of Cumberland* [note 22], 11–12, this immigrant's line is: John<sup>1</sup>, Leonard<sup>B</sup>, Richard<sup>B</sup>, John<sup>C</sup>, Robert<sup>P</sup>, Robert<sup>E</sup>. The Skeltons bore variations on a *fess between three fleurs-de-lis*, and in 1572 one Robert Briscoe's quartering differenced the Skelton arms with a *cinquefoil or rose on the fess* (Field, *Armorial for Cumberland* [note 23], 235–237).

<sup>403</sup> Metcalfe, *Visitations of Northamptonshire* [note 400], 71.

- v. ISOLD BRISKO, “served against the Sarasins and dyed a hermitt.”
- vi. SITH BRISKO, m. RICHARD BROWNE, whose arms were *B. a Cheueron betwene 3 (escallops) o[r] w<sup>th</sup>in a border ingrayled gules.*<sup>[404]</sup>
- vii. SUSAN BRISKO, m. ROBERT ELLIS, whose arms were *O[r]. on a cros sable five (crescents) A[rgent].*<sup>[405]</sup>

*Austin W. Spencer (austinwspencer@gmail.com) is a staff genealogist for the National Society Daughters of the American Revolution and a descendant of William<sup>1</sup> Briscoe.*

*Maureen Markt Dearborn (dearborn@massed.net) is a retired speech and language clinician and a descendant of William<sup>1</sup> Briscoe.*

*David Curtis Dearborn, FASG, is Associate Editor of the Register.*




---

<sup>404</sup> There is no known Brown(e) family in Cumberland with a coat of this description, but some northern English families of this surname bore variations on “a chevron between three lion jamps erased” (Field, *Armorial for Cumberland* [note 23], 98).

<sup>405</sup> These were also the arms of Sir Henry Ellis of Yorkshire, *temp* Edward II. In 1610 a Thomas Ellis held a parcel of Bothel manor in Cumberland (Field, *Armorial for Cumberland* [note 23], 135).

# The Identity of Anne, Wife of Dr. Richard<sup>1</sup> Palgrave of Charlestown, Massachusetts

Robert Battle\*

---

The family of Dr. Richard<sup>1</sup> Palgrave, who arrived in New England by 1630 as part of the Winthrop company, has been studied in print several times—most recently in Robert Charles Anderson’s *The Winthrop Fleet* in 2012.<sup>[1]</sup> These works include the male-line ancestry of Richard for several generations, as well as the baptisms and burials of several of his English-born children in Wymondham, Norfolk. However, the identity of his wife Anne has not been discovered, nor have the baptisms of their first two immigrant children (Mary, wife of Roger Wellington, and Sarah, wife of Dr. John Alcock). Surveys of Norfolk parish registers and probate records have turned up both of those baptisms and, more importantly, the almost-certain identity of Anne (\_\_\_\_) Palgrave.

## Baptisms of Mary and Sarah Palgrave

A search of parish registers in the vicinity of Wymondham uncovered the following baptisms in Fundenhall, Norfolk (bordering Wymondham on the southeast):<sup>[2]</sup>

- |             |   |
|-------------|---|
| 1618 Aug 25 | Maria Palgrave filia Rici Palgrave & Anne uxoris eius ( <i>Mary Palgrave daughter of Richard Palgrave and Anne his wife</i> ) |
| 1619 Sep 23 | Josephus Palgrave filius Richardi Palgrave et uxoris eius ( <i>Joseph Palgrave son of Richard Palgrave and his wife</i> )     |

This first entry is certainly the baptism of Dr. Richard Palgrave’s eldest daughter Mary, wife of Roger Wellington; the second is that of an otherwise-unknown son. The baptism of Richard’s second daughter took place in Hingham, Norfolk, about three miles west of Wymondham:<sup>[3]</sup>

- |               |                                       |
|---------------|---------------------------------------|
| 1620/1 Mar 22 | Sarah the daughter of Richard Pagrave |
|---------------|---------------------------------------|

---

\* I would like to thank Leslie Mahler, FASG, for sharing his discovery of the will of Richard Palgrave’s father-in-law with me (see below) and for reviewing this article.

<sup>1</sup> Robert Charles Anderson, *The Winthrop Fleet: Massachusetts Bay Company Immigrants to New England 1629–1630* (Boston: New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2012), 510–515. For a history of publications on this family, see page 515 and the works cited there.

<sup>2</sup> Registers of Fundenhall, Norfolk, 1605–1621, images on findmypast.co.uk. This small collection of pages seems to be a surviving fragment of an otherwise-lost volume.

<sup>3</sup> Registers of Hingham, Norfolk, 1600ff, images on ancestry.com. “Richarde Palgrave” was one of the witnesses to the will of Thomas Woods of Hingham, dated 6 June 1620 (Archdeaconry of Norfolk original wills, 1620, no. 67 [FSL #167103]).

As noted above, the subsequent baptisms of Richard and Anne Palgrave's English-born children took place in Wymondham.

### Identity of Anne (\_\_\_\_\_) Palgrave

A survey by Leslie Mahler of wills proved in the Consistory Court of Norwich turned up what appears to be the will of Anne (\_\_\_\_\_) Palgrave's father, William Sowgate of Elsing, Norfolk, glover, dated 9 October 1626 and proved 11 November 1626:<sup>[4]</sup>

I William Sowgatt of Elsing in the Countie of Norff glover being sicke of bodey; to be buried in Elsing churchyard; to the poor of Elsing 6s. 8d.; to wife Anne £40 over time (described); to wife Ann all of the household items she brought with her when I married her, she to not make any dowry claim; to son William all my copyhold lands held of the manor of Elsing, he to pay £10 each to **my eldest daughter Ann the wife of Richard Palgrave**, my second daughter Martha the wife of Thomas Ewing, and my youngest daughter Margaret (payments over time, described); if daughters Ann or Martha die before receiving their full payments, their children to receive the residue; to daughter Margaret household items (described); residue to son William, he to be executor; signed by mark; witnesses Richard Ney (by mark), Anthony (Anthoney) Robinson, Thomas Prentice, and John Robinson.

The baptism of “Anne Sowgate the Dawghter of William Sowgate” took place 1 January 1595/6 in Elsing (see below). This would make her 73 at her death on 17 March 1668/9 in Roxbury, Mass., corresponding well to the claim that she was then “aged (as is said) 75”:<sup>[5]</sup>

Besides the fact that we have the right names in the right time in the right location, two other pieces of indirect evidence point to the conclusion that the Richard and Anne (Sowgate) Palgrave from the will above are the Massachusetts immigrants. The first piece of evidence is the scarcity of Richard Palgraves who could potentially be William Sowgate's son-in-law, and the second piece of evidence is that Dr. Richard<sup>1</sup> Palgrave had a significant link to the family of Anne Sowgate.

In an earlier *Register* article, G. Andrews Moriarty confirmed the identity of Dr. Richard Palgrave with the son of that name of Rev. Edward Palgrave of Barnham Broom, Norfolk, noting that in a fairly comprehensive work covering the English Palgrave families of this time period there were three contemporaneous Richard Palgraves: Richard Palgrave of Great Yarmouth, Norfolk (son of John of Pulham St. Mary the Virgin, Norfolk), Richard Palgrave of Thorpe-by-Ixworth, Suffolk (son of Thomas of Pulham St. Mary Magdalen, Norfolk), and Richard Palgrave, son of Rev. Edward Palgrave of Barnham Broom (determined to be the immigrant).<sup>[6]</sup> There was one

<sup>4</sup> Consistory Court of Norwich registered wills, 121:257 (repeated at 504) [FSL #94939]. Elsing is about 6 miles NNW of Wymondham; Barnham Broom (where Dr. Richard Palgrave's father was rector) is directly between the two, about 2 miles from Wymondham and 4 from Elsing.

<sup>5</sup> Anderson, *Winthrop Fleet* [note 2], 514.

<sup>6</sup> G. Andrews Moriarty, “The Parentage and Ancestry of Dr. Richard Palgrave of Charlestown, Mass.” *Register* 102 (1948): 87–98 (esp. 90–91). The work in question was Charles John Palmer and Stephen Tucker's *Palgrave Family Memorials* (Norwich: Miller and Leavins, 1878) (see next note).

additional contemporaneous Richard Palgrave—a Richard Palgrave who had children baptized in St. George’s Tombland, Norwich, Norfolk, from 1624 to 1632.<sup>[7]</sup> Of these four, Richard Palgrave of Great Yarmouth can be ruled out as the husband of Anne Sowgate, as he married Joan Harris in 1625/6 (who after his death married Rev. John Youngs).<sup>[8]</sup> Richard Palgrave of Thorpe-by-Ixworth cannot be completely ruled out as a possible husband of Anne Sowgate, but two things make it very unlikely—he was eleven years younger than his putative bride;<sup>[9]</sup> and the name of his only known wife was Elizabeth.<sup>[10]</sup> Richard Palgrave of St. George’s Tombland, Norwich, is a more likely candidate as the husband of Anne Sowgate than the other two non-immigrant rivals, as the name of his wife is not known,<sup>[11]</sup> and he must have been born earlier than 1607 in order to have a child baptized in 1624. However, he was most likely still significantly younger than Anne Sowgate,<sup>[12]</sup> and to all indications he did not have the same sort of connection to the Sowgate family that Dr. Richard Palgrave did.

Though her father and paternal grandfather were both glovers, Anne Sowgate came of a family with several clerical connections.<sup>[13]</sup> Her aunt Margaret Sowgate was the widow of Rev. Bartholomew Fenwick (vicar of Rougham and rector of Hockering, both in Norfolk) and mother of another Rev. Bartholomew Fenwick (vicar of Runhall, Norfolk). More importantly, another aunt, Mary Sowgate, was the wife of Rev. John Cooke, who was rector of Colton, Norfolk, from 1589 until his death in 1638. The parish of Colton directly borders that of Barnham Broom, where Rev. Edward Palgrave was rector from 1567 until his death in 1623. There was thus a period of about

<sup>7</sup> *Palgrave Family Memorials* [note 6], 195; perhaps discounted by Moriarty due to the fact that this Richard Palgrave remained in Norwich after Dr. Richard Palgrave was known to be in Massachusetts. The other three Richard Palgraves appear on the following pages of Moriarty’s article: Richard of Great Yarmouth on 60, 172, and 173; Richard of Thorpe-by-Ixworth on 58, 125, 127, and 129; and Richard of Barnham Broom on 32, 140, and 194.

<sup>8</sup> See Moriarty, “Parentage and Ancestry of Dr. Richard Palgrave” [note 6], 89, and Hal Bradley, “William<sup>1</sup> Brown of Salem, Massachusetts, and the Youngs Family of Suffolk, England, and Southold, Long Island” *TAG* 88 (2016): 73–77 (esp. 76). The descendants of Richard and Joan’s daughter Anna (Palgrave) Woodbury are covered in David C. Dearborn and John Bradley Arthaud, “William<sup>1</sup> Woodbury of Salem and Beverly, Massachusetts” *Register* 175 (2021): 207–222 (esp. 210–215), 348–360, and 176 (2022): 70–92 (esp. 70–85).

<sup>9</sup> “Richard sonne of Thomas Palgrave” was baptized 18 Jan. 1606/7 in Attleborough, Norfolk (Registers of Attleborough, Norfolk, 1552ff, images on ancestry.com). The baptisms of other children of Thomas Palgrave in Attleborough indicate that this is the correct Richard (*Cecily* on 26 Feb. 1597/8, *Edward* on 14 Sep. 1601, *Thomas* on 24 Oct. 1602, *Elizabeth* on 15 Jan. 1603/4, and *Christian* on 9 May 1605); these names match the children of Thomas Palgrave of Pulham St. Mary Magdalen named in his will (*Palgrave Family Memorials* [note 7], 125).

<sup>10</sup> His widow Elizabeth administered her estate in 1659 and was named in the will of her brother-in-law Edward Palgrave in 1656/7 (*Palgrave Family Memorials* [note 7], 129 and 127).

<sup>11</sup> He apparently married (2<sup>nd</sup>) Elizabeth \_\_\_\_\_, who, as “Elizabeth Palgrave the wif of Rich Palgrave of Norwch aged 26 yeares,” wished to join her husband in Holland and was examined to that end 16 June 1637 (Charles Boardman Jewson, *Transcript of Three Registers of Passengers from Great Yarmouth to Holland and New England 1637–1639*, Norfolk Record Society vol. 25 [repr. Baltimore: Genealogical Publishing Company, 1990], 36).

<sup>12</sup> He was most likely the Richard Palgrave who was baptized 18 Mar. 1603/4 in St. Stephen, Norwich, son of Thomas Palgrave (Registers of St. Stephen, Norwich, Norfolk, 1538ff, images on findmypast.co.uk).

<sup>13</sup> For citations for facts mentioned in this section, see the Genealogical Summary below.



thirty-four years during which the father of Dr. Richard Palgrave and the uncle of Anne Sowgate were rectors of neighboring parishes.<sup>[14]</sup>

*Sowgate-related Entries in the Registers of Elsing, Norfolk.*<sup>[15]</sup>

Baptisms

1565 May 13	Margaret Londe the dawghter of William Londe
1566 Apr. 14	Margaret Sowgate the dawghter of William Sowgate
1568 Jul. 3	Mary Sowgate the dawghter of William Sowate [sic]
1568 Nov. 30	Umpbery Londe the sonne of William Londe
1570 Oct. 15	John Londe the sonne of William Londe
1571 Dec. 29	Elizabeth Sowgate the dawghter of William Sowgate
1589 Apr. 20	William Drake the sonne of William Drake
1590 Nov. 19	William Drake the sonne of Roberte Drake
1590/1 Jan. 10	Thomas Drake the sonne of William Drake
1593 Aug. 25	Francis Drake the sonne of William Drake
1594 Apr. 26	Richard Eastwick the sonne of Robert Eastwick
1595 Mar. 30	Dorathe Drake the dawghter of William Drake
1595/6 Jan. 1	Anne Sowgate the Dawghter of William Sowgate
1596 Sep. 1	Nicholas Drake the sone of Robert Drake
1596 Dec. 12	Agnes Eastwick the Dawghter of Robert Eastwick
1596/7 Jan. 9	Allyn Drake the sonne of William Drake
1598/9 Jan. 5	Henry Drake & Adam Drake the sonnes of William Drake
1598/9 Mar. 11	Sewsan Eastwicke the Dawghter of Robert Eastwick
1599/1600 Jan. 30	Bartholomewe Drake the sonne of William Drake
1601 Apr. 12	John Eastwicke the sonne of Robte Eastwicke
1602 Sep. 12	Alice Drake the daughter of Willm Drake
1602/3 Jan. 19	Jane Estwicke the daughter of Robte Estwicke
1603 Apr. 25	Willm Suggatt the sonne of Willm Suggatt
1605 Jun. 2	Margaret Drake the daughter of Willm Drake
1605 Jul. 21	Thomas Estwicke the sonne of Robte Estwicke
1606/7 Feb. 22	Margaret Suggatt the daughter of Willm Suggatt
1607/8 Feb. 14	Robte the sonne of Robte Estwicke
1608 May 8	John the sonne of Gregorie Vincent
1611 Jul. 24	John Drake ye sonne of Willm Drake & Anne his wife
1622 Jun. 2	Willyam the sonn of Thomas Drake
1625 Apr. 24	Anne the daughter of Thomas Drake
1626/7 Jan. 14	Emeney the daughter of Frances Drake and Anne his wife

<sup>14</sup> Mary Sowgate married Rev. John Cooke as his second wife in 1594, five years into this 34-year period (and about a year before Anne Sowgate was born).

<sup>15</sup> Registers of Elsing, Norfolk, 1558ff, checked through 1680, images on findmypast.co.uk.

- 1628 Apr. 20 Thomas the son of Peter Leman & Dorothey his wife
- 1628 Aug. 31 Elizabeth the daughter of Willyam Sougat & Cicelly his wife
- 1628 Nov. 16 Thomas the son of Bartholomew Drake and Anne his wife
- 1628 Dec. 21 Richard the son of Frances Drake and Anne his wife
- 1629 Apr. 6 Sarah the daughter of Willyam Drake & Tryphena his wife
- 1629/30 Feb. 21 Thomas the son of Frances Drake and Anne his wife
- 1630 Oct. 17 Willyam the son of Peter Leaman and Dorothey his wife
- 1630/1 Feb. 6 Hamond the son of Willyam Sougat & Cicely his wife
- 1631 Apr. 17 Alice the daughter of Willm Drake and Tryphena his wife
- 1632/3 Feb. 17 Dorothey the daughter of Peter Leaman and Dorothey his wife
- 1632/3 Feb. 24 Frances the son of Frances Drake and Anne his wife
- 1632/3 Mar. 20 Mary the daughter of Willyam Sougate & Cicely his wife
- 1633/4 Feb. 16 Frances the sonne of Bartholomew Drake and Anne his wife
- 1633/4 Mar. 23 Willyam the sonne of Willyam Drake and Tryphena his wife
- 1634 May. 15 Thomas the son of Thomas Drake and Anne his wife
- 1634/5 Jan. 1 Adam the son of Frances Drake & Anne his wife
- 1636 Jun. 28 Elizabeth the daughter of Bartholomew Drake & ~~Mary~~ Anne his wife
- 1636 Jul. 10 Willyam the son [of] Willyam Drake & Tryphena his wife
- 1636/7 Feb. 12 Gyles the son of Willyam Drake & Tryphena his wife
- 1636/7 Feb. 19 Elizabeth the daughter of Peter Leaman and Dorothey his wife
- 1638 Jul. 1 Anne the daughter of Frances Drake & Mary his wife
- 1639 Jun. 3 Anne the daughter of Bartolmew Drake & Anne his wife
- 1639/40 Jan. 19 Thomas the son of Frances Drake & Mary his wife
- 1641/2 Jan. 9 Judith the daughter of Bartholmew Drake & Anne his wife
- 1642 Apr. 3 Alice the daughter of Frances Drake & Mary his wife
- 1643/4 Jan. 28 William the son of Frances Drake & Mary his wife
- 1643/4 Feb. 18 John the son of Bartholmew Drake & Anne his wife
- 1646 Mar. 25 Mary the daughter of Bartholmew Drake & Anne his wife (b. 18 Mar.)
- 1646 Apr. 17 Adam the son of Frances Drake & Mary his wife (b. 11 Apr.)
- 1647/8 Feb. 3 Sara the daughter of Frances Drake & Mary his wife (b. 30 Jan.)
- 1649 May 11 Alice the daughter of Frances Drake & Mary his wife (b. 5 May)

- 1649 Jul. 16 Henry the son of Bartholmew Drake & Anne his wife  
(b. 12 Jul.)
- 1650 May 10 Thomas the son of William Drake & Alice his wife  
(b. 2 May)
- 1651/2 Jan. 3 Martha the daughter of Frances Drake & Mary his wife  
(b. 2 Jan.)
- 1652/3 Feb. 6 Anne the daughter of William Drake & Alice his wife
- 1655 Jul. 15 Thomas the son of Thomas Leman and Elizabeth his wife  
(b. 9 Jul.)
- 1655/6 Mar. 16 John the son of William Drake and Alice his wife  
(b. 10 Mar.)
- 1656/7 Feb. 26 Peter the son of Thomas Leman and Elizabeth his wife  
(b. 19 Feb.)
- 1658/9 Jan. 15 Robert the son of William Drake & Alice his wife  
(b. 10 Jan.)
- 1660 Mar. 29 Mary the daughter of Thomas Leman and Elizabeth his  
wife (b. 17 Mar.)
- 1660 Nov. 18 Bartholomew the son of Frances Drake & Elizabeth his  
wife
- 1660/1 Feb. 3 Robert the son of Robert Estweek & Sara his wife  
(b. 30 Jan.)
- 1661 Dec. 29 Leman the son of Simon Estweek & Dorothey his wife  
(b. 21 Dec.)
- 1661/2 Jan. 24 Anne the daughter of Thomas Leman & Elizabeth his wife  
(b. same day)
- 1662 Dec. 13 Mary the daughter of William Drake
- 1662/3 Feb. 15 Frances the son of Frances Drake & Elizabeth his wife  
(b. 7 Feb.)
- 1663 Jun. 28 James the sonne of Robert Estweek & Sara his wife  
(b. 22 Jun.)
- 1664 Apr. 10 Simon the son of Simon Estweek & Dorothee his wife  
(b. 5 Apr.)
- 1664 Aug. 14 Alice the daughter of Thomas Leaman & Elizabeth his  
wife (b. 9 Aug.)
- 1664/5 Feb. 12 Anne the daughter of Frances Drake & Elizabeth his wife
- 1665 Aug. 15 Robert the son of Thomas Estwick & Margaret his wife  
(b. 9 Aug.)
- 1665/6 Feb. 20 Peter ye son of Simon Estweek & Dorothey his wife  
(b. same day)
- 1666 Mar. 28 Margaret ye daughter of Adam Drake & Elizabeth his wife
- 1666 May 13 Peter the son of Thomas Leaman & Elizabeth his wife  
(b. 7 May)
- 1666 Sep. 2 William ye son of Thomas Drake & Katherin his wife

- 1667 Jun. 30 Thomas the son of Frances Drake & Elizabeth his wife  
(b. 28 Jun.)
- 1667 Jul. 7 Anne the daughter of Adam Drake & Elizabeth his wife
- 1667/8 Jan. 12 William Leman the son of Thomas Leman & Elizabeth his  
wife (b. 4 Jan.)
- 1668 Aug. 30 Thomas the son of Thomas Estwick & Margaret his wife
- 1669 Jun. 13 Francis Drake the son of Thomas Drake & Katherine his  
wife
- 1670 May 15 Judith the daughter of Francis Drake & Elizabeth his wife
- 1671 Apr. 30 John the son of Adam Drake & Elizabeth his wife
- 1671 Nov. 26 Elizabeth the daughter of Frances Drake & Elizabeth his  
wife
- 1672 Mar. 30 Elizabeth the daughter of Thomas Drake and Katherine  
his wife
- 1673 Jul. 1 John the sonn of Thomas Leman & Jane his wife
- 1674 Apr. 12 Mary the daughter of Francis Drake and Elizabeth his wife
- 1675 Mar. 28 Ann the daughter of Thomas Drake and Katherine his  
wife
- 1675 May 9 Judith the daughter of Thomas Leman and Jane his wife
- 1676 May 7 Thomas the sonn of Francis Drake and Elizabeth his wife
- 1677 Nov. 4 Elizabeth the daughter of Thomas Leman and Jane his  
wife
- 1678 Oct. 27 William the sonn of Thomas Leman and Jane his wife
- 1678/9 Feb. 20 Sammuell the sonn of Adam Drake and Elizabeth his wife
- 1679/80 Jan. 17 Thomas the sonn of Thomas Leman late deceased and  
Jane his wife

#### Burials

- 1563 Mar. 31 Margery Sogane the dawghter of William Sogane
- 1568 Dec. 5 The same Umphery [i.e., Umphery Londe son of William  
Londe]
- 1572 Nov. 1 William Londe
- 1572 Nov. 18 Margerie Londe the dawghter of John Londe
- 1573 Sep. 26 Elizabeth Sowgate the dawghter of William Sogate
- 1574 Apr. 26 Richarde Sowgate
- 1595/6 Mar. 4 William Sowgate
- 1598/9 Jan. 6 The same Henry Drake
- 1598/9 Feb. 5 Adam Drake
- 1605 Jun. 6 Anne Drake the wife of Willm Drake
- 1606/7 Mar. 10 Alice Drake the daughter of Willm Drake
- 1607/8 Feb. 21 Robte the sonne of Robte Estwicke
- 1608/9 Jan. 31 Martha Suggate the wife of Willm Suggate

1609 Dec. 26	John Vincent ye sonne of Gregorie Vincent
1613 Mar. 27	Willm Drake
1615/16 Jan. 11	Margaret Suggatte wedowe
1620/1 Jan. 3	The still borne child of Thomas Drake & Anne his wife
1626 Oct. 15	Willyam Sougate
1626/7 Mar. 1	Mathew Sougate
1627 Apr. 15	Anne Drake widdow
1628/9 Jan. 11	Richard the son of Frances Drake
1629 May 31	Gregory Vincent
1630 Jul. 29	Elizabeth Vincent widd.
1630 Oct. 21	Willyam the son of Peeter Leaman & Dorothey his wife
1631/2 Jan. 15	Robert Estweek
1632 Mar. 28	Rose Eastweeke widdow
1632 Sep. 12	Thomas the son of Frances Drake
1634/5 Jan. 19	Adam the son of Frances Drake & Anne his wife
1634/5 Feb. 26	Emeny the daughter of Frances Drake & Anne his wife
1634/5 Mar. 6	Anne the wife of Frances Drake
1638 Apr. 29	William Drake
1642 Jun. 26	Anne the daughter of Bartolmew Drake
1642/3 Jan. 24	Frances the son of Frances Drake
1643 Jun. 3	Thomas Leaman
1644/5 Mar. 8	Mary the daughter of Bartlemew Drake
1646 Nov. 14	Thomas the son of Thomas Drake & Anne his wife
1648 Aug. 1	Alice the daughter of Frances Drake
1649 May 24	John the son of Bartholmew Drake
1650/1 Mar. 5	Henry the son of Bartlemew Drake
1651 Apr. 9	Bartlemew Drake
1652/3 Feb. 13	Thomas Drake
1653 Nov. 9	Frances Drake
1654 Jul. 26	Lucie ye wife of Thomas Leaman
1655 Aug. 4	Elizabeth the wife of Thomas Leaman
1657 May 16	Peter ye son of Thomas Leaman
1657 Oct. 14	Peter Leaman
1658 Apr. 7	Elizabeth Leaman
1658 Nov. 15	Dorothee Leaman widdow
1660 Jun. 10	Richard Estweek
1661 Nov. 2	Thomas Leaman senr
1661 Dec. 9	Anne the wife of Thomas Drake
1661 Dec. 23	The said Leaman [i.e., Leman Eastweek; <i>sic</i> – perhaps 23 Jan. 1661/2 meant]
1662 Dec. 13	Alice ye wife of William Drake

1662 Dec. 20	Mary the daughter of William Drake
1662 Dec. 30	Thomas Drake
1664 Aug. 25	The said Alice [i.e., Alice Leaman]
1665 Apr. 20	Martha Drake
1665 Jul. 28	Thomasin ye wife of William Drake
1666 Sep. 19	Peter Leaman
1666/7 Mar. 18	Robert Estwick
1667 Jul. 6	Simon Estwick
1667 Jul. 25	The sayd Anne Drake
1667 Aug. 18	Thomas Estwick
1667/8 Feb. 12	Mary Leman widdow
1669 Oct. 9	Willyam Leman
1670 Oct. 26	Thomas Drake the son of Francis Drake
1671 Nov. 5	Robert Eastweke the sonn of Robert Eastweke and Sara his wife
1671 Nov. 15	Margret Drake the daughter of Adam Drake and Elizabeth his wife
1672 Aug. 14	Elizabeth the wife of Thomas Leman
1677 Aug. 23	Judith the daughter of Thomas Leman and Jane his wife
1677 Nov. 10	The sayd Elizabeth [i.e., Elizabeth Leman]
1678 Nov. 28	The sayd William [i.e., William Leman]
1679 Aug. 27	Thomas Leman
1679 Aug. 30	Samuell the sonn of Adam Drake
1680 Jul. 6	Ann Drake widow
1680 Nov. 30	William Drake
1680 Dec. 15	Thomas Drake
1680/1 Jan. 6	Ann the daughter of Thomas Drake

#### Marriages

1588 Jun. 20	William Drake & Anne Sowgate
1594 Sep. 25	William Sowgate & Martha Vincente
1594 Nov. 17	Richarde Eastwick & Roose Sowgate
1599 Sep. 1	Bartholomewe Fenixe & Margaret Sowgate
1606 Jun. 12	Willim Drake & Anne Wattes
1623 May 5	Frannces Drake & Anne Feild
1626 Sep. 17	Peter Leaman and Dorothey Drake
1627 Aug. 19	Willyam Vincent & Agnes Archer
1632 Nov. 6	Firmin Claxon and Margaret Drake
1637 Apr. 24	Frances Drake & Mary Armiger
1639 Jul. 9	Hugh Moore clerk rector of the p[ar]ish of Burston and Elizabeth Cooke
1648 Oct. 16	William Armiger & Mary Leaman

1655 Dec. 4	Roger White widower & Mary Drake widow both of Elsing (by banns) (by William Stewart justice of the peace, witnesses James Armiger and William Okely)
1655/6 Feb. 20	John Howlett of North Tuddenham singelman and Elizabeth Leman of Elsing singelwoman (by banns) (by Edmond Borman Esquire, justice of the peace, witnesses Thomas Falkner, Thomas Leman, and John Thinge)
1655/6 Mar. 24	Thomas Leaman of Elsing widower & Elizabeth Flemming of Billingford singlewoman (by banns) (by William Stewart of Geystwick, justice of the peace, witnesses Thomas Flemming, John Reyner, and Thomas Leman)
1658 Jun. 8	William Coldwell minister of gods holy word at Wisbech & Judith Leaman daughter of John Leaman deceased (by banns) (by John Robinson, minister of Elsing)
1659 Nov. 14	Frances Drake & Elizabeth Hill (by banns) (by John Robinson, minister)
1660 Apr. 7	Simon Estwood & Dorothy Leman
1660 May 3	Richard Leaman son of Samuell Leaman & Dorothey Belson daughter of Thomas Belson
1662 Apr. 8	William Sougate & Anne Skillin
1662/3 Jan. 13	John Cobb & Anne Drake
1663 Jun. 8	Thomas Estweek & Margaret Thurston
1665 Sep. 26	Thomas Drake & Katherin Aldrich
1665 Oct. 10	Adam Drake & Elizabeth Helcot
1666 May. 18	William German & Judith Drake
Churchwardens	
1605	Wm Suggat
1606	Willm Suggatte

## Genealogical Summary

**1. WILLIAM<sup>B</sup> SOWGATE**, buried in Elsing 4 March 1595/6; married **MARGARET** (possibly **LOND**)<sup>[16]</sup> (buried there 11 January 1615/16).

William Sowgate was one of the appraisers of the estates of Elsing residents Elizabeth Durrant, widow, in 1584, Bartholomew Raven, clerk, in 1590, and Edmond Heyward, butcher, in 1592.<sup>[17]</sup> William Sowgate was a juror at

<sup>16</sup> In his will, William Sowgate referred to Henry Lond as his brother-in-law, while referencing the will of William Lond. The will of William Lond of Elsing, weaver, was dated 1572 (no day or month) and proved 8 Dec. 1572; in it he named (among others) wife Agnes and brothers Henry Lond and William "Suggatt" (later "Sowgat") (Archdeaconry of Norwich registered wills, 17:306 [FSL #173288]). The most likely connection implied by these wills is that the wife of William Sowgate was a sister of William and Henry Lond.

<sup>17</sup> Consistory Court of Norwich probate inventories, 2:52 [FSL #1565979]; called William "Sowgat" (signed by mark); 6:32 [FSL #156993]; called William "Southgate" (signed by mark); and 9:253

the Elsing manorial court of 23 December 1595; in the subsequent court (1 July 1596) his properties were listed, with his widow Margaret noted as administratrix.<sup>[18]</sup> The will of William “Suggett” of Elsing, glover, was dated 12 October 1595 and proved 8 May 1596:<sup>[19]</sup>

to be buried in Elsing churchyard; 10s. to the reparation of the church; to wife Margaret all my houses and lands both bond and free in Elsing for her life (she making no waste); after her death, said properties to son William Suggett, he to make the following payments: to my son Matthew £10, to my daughter Rose £10, to my daughter Agnes £3-6-8, to my daughter Margaret £10, and to my daughter Mary £10 (over time, described); to sons Matthew and William all my stock of wool and leather and the debts owed me by my butchers, my vats and troughs, and two geldings with their tack (William to divide them and Matthew to pick his half); to daughter Margaret an additional £10 to be paid by wife Margaret; to the four children of son-in-law William Drake £5 to be held by him until they are 21 (to eldest William Drake 40s., and to Thomas, Frances, and Dorothy, 20s. each); to daughters Rose, Agnes, and Margaret, a cow and a bed (with bedding) each; to son William furniture and materials (described); “whereas a trustee hath bene comytted unto mee for the selling of the howses and Landes of Willm Lond deceassid” sons Matthew and William appointed as factors or deputies to perform that “together with Henrie Lond my brother in lawe accordinge as in the testament and last will of the saide Willm Londe . . .”; residue to wife Margaret, she to be executrix; signed by mark; witnesses Willm Smythe, Thomas Buxon, and John Cook.

Margaret “Suggett” was a witness to the 1604 will of (her son-in-law) Rev. Bartholomew Fenwick (see below). The will of Margaret “Sugget” of Elsing, widow, “beinge weake & sicke in bodie,” was dated 27 January 1608/9 and proved 28 February 1615/16:<sup>[20]</sup>

to the poor of Elsing 3s. 4d.; to son Matthew Suggett bed and bedding and other household items (described); to son William Suggett household items (described); to daughter Rose clothes, linens, household items (described), saddle bridle, and bedding; to daughter Margaret household items (described); to goddaughter Elizabeth Cooke 1 yard kerchief; to goddaughter Margaret Fenwicke pewter platter; to grandchildren 6s. 8d. apiece (to be held by their parents until 21); to sometime servant Thomas Key 2s.; to William Fenwicke 2s.; to Margaret Pattricke 2s.; to Humphrey (Umpfhrie) Jarvis the younger 12d.; to goddaughter Margaret Padnall 4s.; to Anne Soggett best coffer and cushion; to Martha Suggett little coffer and cushion; to grandchild William Suggett great chest and cushion; residue to sons Matthew and William, they to be executors; witnesses Thomas Hellcote, Thomas Key, and Thomas Buxon.

---

[FSL #1565994]; called William “Suggate” (not signed). His mark was a large upper-case “W” with the interior lines crossing midway.

<sup>18</sup> Elsing, Norfolk, manorial court book, 1595–1637 [FSL #1951490 item 1; DGS 4397543]. There is a gap in these records between 29 Mar. 1599 and 26 Apr. 1626.

<sup>19</sup> Consistory Court of Norwich registered wills, 92:11 [FSL #94919]. At the Elsing manorial court of 12 Aug. 1596 [note 18], Henry Lond (Lande), Matthew Sowgate, and William Sowgate were noted as responsible for selling the properties of William Lond based on the latter’s 1572 will and the recent death of William Sowgate.

<sup>20</sup> Consistory Court of Norwich registered wills, 110:21 [FSL #94934].



Children of William<sup>B</sup> and Margaret (Lond?) Sowgate:

2.
  - i. WILLIAM<sup>A</sup> SOWGATE, m. (1) MARTHA VINCENT; m. (2) ANN (\_\_\_\_) \_\_\_\_.
  - ii. MATTHEW SOWGATE, bur. in Elsing 1 Mar. 1626/7. Matthew Sowgate was named in his father's will; he was an executor of his mother's will. The will of Matthew "Sougate" of Elsing, glover, "Beinge sick in Bodye," was dated 28 Feb. 1626/7 and proved 9 Apr. 1627:<sup>[21]</sup>

to be buried in Elsing churchyard; to the poor of Elsing 3s. 4d.; to sister Rose Estweek 5s. and the money she owes me; to niece Margaret Sougate brass pot, pair of cobirons, and a spill; to the children of Robert Spencer of Colton 5s. apiece when said Robert pays the money he owes me; to the three youngest children of brother Cooke of Colton 5s. apiece; residue to nephew William Sougate, he to be executor; signed by mark; witnesses Anthony Robinson and John Robinson.
  - iii. ROSE SOWGATE, bur. in Elsing 28 Mar. 1632; m. there 17 Nov. 1594 RICHARD EASTWICK (probably a mistake for *Robert*).<sup>[22]</sup> Rose was named in her parents' wills. She was called "Rose Estweek" in her brother Matthew's will.
  - iv. AGNES/ANNE SOWGATE, bur. in Elsing 6 June 1605; m. there 20 June 1588 WILLIAM DRAKE. He m. (2) there 12 June 1606 Anne Watts and was bur. there 27 Mar. 1613. Agnes was named in the will of her father, as were son-in-law William Drake and grandchildren William Drake, Thomas Drake, Francis Drake, and Dorothy Drake. William Drake was a juror at every Elsing manorial court from 1596 to 1599.<sup>[23]</sup> The will of William Drake the elder of Elsing, linen weaver, "being sick and weake in body," was dated 9 Feb. 1612/13 and proved 24 Apr. 1613:<sup>[24]</sup>

to son William Drake all my houses and lands in Elsing, he to pay total of £49 10s. to my wife Anne and my children Thomas, Francis, Dorothy, Allen, Bartholomew, Margaret, and John (times and amounts described); son William to allow my wife Anne to dwell in the house with liberty in it for 10 years if she remains a widow (otherwise she to have 23s. yearly), plus 26s. 8d. yearly to take in and bring up my daughter Margaret; if son William does not pay, then son Thomas Drake to take properties and make payments; to sons Thomas and Francis a pair of looms each; to son Thomas smallest brass pot; to son Francis largest brass pot; to wife Anne milk cow and all linens except a pair of sheets, and all her goods that she brought with her when she married me, and other household items and crops (described); residue to son William, he to pay debts and see to the bringing up of my sons Allen and Bartholomew Drake until 16; son William

<sup>21</sup> Ibid., 122:22 [FSL #94940].

<sup>22</sup> There are almost no other references to a Richard Eastwick in the Elsing parish registers or manorial records, but many to Robert Eastwick (including the burial of "Robert Estweek" shortly before Rose was called a widow in her own burial record; see above).

<sup>23</sup> Elsing manorial court book [note 18].

<sup>24</sup> Archdeaconry of Norwich registered wills, 34:326 [FSL #173303].

executor; witnesses William Hawker, William Allinson, and Thomas Buxon.

Children of William and Agnes/Anne (Sowgate) Drake (bp. and bur. in Elsing):

1. *William Drake*, bp. 20 Apr. 1589.<sup>[25]</sup> He was named in his grandfather's will; he was executor of his father's will. William Drake was a juror at many of the Elsing manorial courts between 1626 and 1633.<sup>[26]</sup>
2. *Thomas Drake*, bp. 10 Jan. 1590/1; prob. bur. in Elsing 30 Dec. 1662; m. *Anne* (\_\_\_\_).<sup>[27]</sup> She was probably the Anne, wife of Thomas Drake, bur. in Elsing 9 Dec. 1661. Thomas Drake was named in his grandfather's will and his father's will. He was a juror at several of the Elsing manorial courts between 1627 and 1637.<sup>[28]</sup>
3. *Francis Drake*, bp. 25 Aug. 1593; bur. in Elsing 9 Nov. 1653; m. there (1) 4 May 1623 *Anne Field* (bur. there 6 Mar. 1634/5);<sup>[29]</sup> m. (2) there 24 Apr. 1637 *Mary Armiger*.<sup>[30]</sup> She m. (2) in Elsing 4 Dec. 1655, Roger White, widower. Francis was named in his grandfather's will and his father's will.
4. *Dorothy Drake*, bp. 30 Mar. 1595; bur. in Elsing 15 Nov. 1658; m. there 17 Sep. 1626 *Peter Leaman*.<sup>[31]</sup> He was bur. there 14 Oct. 1657. Dorothy was named in her grandfather's will and her father's will.
5. *Allen Drake*, bp. 9 Jan. 1596/7. Allen was named in his father's will as being under 16.
6. *Henry Drake*, bp. 5 and bur. 6 Jan. 1598/9.
7. *Adam Drake*, bp. 5 Jan. and bur. 5 Feb. 1598/9.

<sup>25</sup> He was perhaps the William Drake who, with wife Tryphena, had the following children baptized in Elsing: *Sarah Drake* (bp. 6 Apr. 1629), *Alice Drake* (bp. 17 Apr. 1631), *William Drake* (bp. 23 Mar. 1633/4; bur. there 10 July 1636), and *Giles Drake* (bp. 12 Feb. 1636/7).

<sup>26</sup> Elsing manorial court book [note 18].

<sup>27</sup> They had, besides a stillborn child buried in Elsing 3 Jan. 1620/1, the following children baptized and buried there: *William Drake* (bp. 2 June 1622), *Anne Drake* (bp. 24 Apr. 1624), and *Thomas Drake* (bp. 15 May 1634; bur. 14 Nov. 1646).

<sup>28</sup> Elsing manorial court book [note 18].

<sup>29</sup> They had the following children baptized and buried in Elsing: *Emeney Drake* (bp. 14 Jan. 1626/7; bur. 26 Feb. 1634/5), *Richard Drake* (bp. 21 Dec. 1628; bur. 11 Jan. 1628/9), *Thomas Drake* (bp. 21 Feb. 1629/30; bur. 12 Sep. 1632), *Francis Drake* (bp. 24 Feb. 1632/3; bur. 24 Jan. 1642/3), and *Adam Drake* (bp. 1 and bur. 19 Jan. 1634/5).

<sup>30</sup> They had the following children baptized in Elsing: *Anne Drake* (bp. 1 July 1638), *Thomas Drake* (again) (bp. 19 Jan. 1639/40), *Alice Drake* (bp. 3 Apr. 1642; bur. 1 Aug. 1648), *William Drake* (bp. 28 Jan. 1643/4), *Adam Drake* (again) (b. 11 and bp. 17 Apr. 1646), *Sarah Drake* (b. 20 Jan. and bp. 3 Feb. 1647/8), *Alice Drake* (again) (b. 5 and bp. 11 May 1649), and *Martha Drake* (b. 2 and bp. 3 Jan. 1651/2; perhaps bur. 20 Apr. 1665).

<sup>31</sup> They had the following children baptized and buried in Elsing: *Thomas Leaman* (bp. 20 Apr. 1628; perhaps bur. 3 June 1643), *William Leaman* (bp. 17 and bur. 21 Oct. 1630), *Dorothy Leaman* (bp. 17 Feb. 1632/3), and *Elizabeth Leaman* (bp. 19 Feb. 1636/7).

8. *Bartholomew Drake*, bp. 30 Jan. 1599/1600; bur. Elsing 9 Apr. 1651 or 24 Aug. 1681;<sup>[32]</sup> m. *Anne* (\_\_\_\_).<sup>[33]</sup> She was possibly the Ann Drake, widow, who was bur. in Elsing 6 July 1680. Bartholomew was named in his father's will as being under 16.
9. *Alice Drake*, bp. 12 Sep. 1602; bur. 10 Mar. 1606/7.
10. *Margaret Drake*, bp. 2 June 1605; m. in Elsing 6 Nov. 1632 *Firmin Claxon*. Margaret was named in her father's will.

v. MARGARET SOWGATE, bp. in Elsing 14 Apr. 1566; m. there (as his second wife) 1 Sep. 1599 BARTHOLOMEW FENWICK (d. 4 and bur. in Hockering, Norfolk 5 Mar. 1603/4).<sup>[34]</sup> Bartholomew Fenwick was vicar of Rougham, Norfolk, 1583–1586,<sup>[35]</sup> and rector of Hockering at his death.

Margaret was named in her parents' wills. The will of "Bartholmew Fenwicke of Hockeringe in the Countie of Norff Clarke beinge sicke in bodie" was dated 27 Feb. 1603/4 and proved 10 Mar. 1603/4:<sup>[36]</sup>

to be buried in chancel of Hockering; to the reparation of the church of Hockering 6s. 8d.; to son Robert Fenwicke 40s.; to son William £3 and a brown filly; to son Bartholomew £3 when 21; to unborn child £3 when 21; to son Bartholomew black cow and bullock; residue to wife Margaret, she to be executrix; witnesses "John Cooke Clarke Marie Cooke wife of the saide John Cooke & Margaret Suggett"

Children of Bartholomew and Margaret (Sowgate) Fenwick:

1. *Francis Fenwick*, bp. 5 and bur. in Hockering 11 Oct. 1600.<sup>[37]</sup>
2. *Bartholomew Fenwick*, bp. in Hockering 16 Mar. 1601/2.<sup>[38]</sup> Bartholomew "Fenwicke" was "Adm[itte]d sizar (age 19) at Caius [College, Cambridge], Apr. 24, 1621. S[on] of Bartholomew, R[ector] of Hockering, Norfolk. B[orn] there. School, private (Mr Castleton). Matric[ulated] 1621. Ord[ained] deacon (Nor-

<sup>32</sup> Elsing registers [note 15]: Bartholomew Drake.

<sup>33</sup> They had the following children baptized and buried in Elsing: *Thomas Drake* (bp. 16 Nov. 1628), *Francis Drake* (bp. 16 Feb. 1633/4), *Elizabeth Drake* (bp. 28 June 1636), *Anne Drake* (bp. 3 June 1639; bur. 26 June 1642), *Judith Drake* (bp. 9 Jan. 1641/2), *John Drake* (bp. 18 Feb. 1643/4; bur. 24 May 1649), *Mary Drake* (b. 18 and bp. 25 Mar. 1646), and *Henry Drake* (b. 12 and bp. 16 July 1649; bur. 5 Mar. 1650/1).

<sup>34</sup> Registers of Hockering, Norfolk, 1561ff, images on findmypast.co.uk: "Bartholomaeus Phenwick cleric obiit 4 die Martij circiter hora[m] decima[m] ante meridiem, et sepult fuit die sequente [died 4 March about 10 a.m. and buried the next day]." He had children before his marriage to Margaret Sowgate: *Robert* (named in will), *Michael* (bp. in Hockering 18 July 1585; bur. there 4 Sep 1586), and *William* (bp. in Hockering 8 Oct 1587; named in will). His prior wife was Elizabeth Howes, widow, who received a license to marry "Bartholomeum Fenwick clici Rectorem de Mattisshall barrowe" on 1 Oct. 1583 (Consistory Court of Norwich act books 1559–1588 [FSL #1595562; image 1427]); "Elyzabeth Fenwycke" was buried 22 Dec. 1598 in Hockering.

<sup>35</sup> Bartholomew "Fenwicke" was presented vicar of Rougham 24 Dec. 1583, followed by Robert Brooke on 12 Sep. 1586. Clergy of the Church of England Database [CCEd], theclergydatabase.org.uk.

<sup>36</sup> Consistory Court of Norwich registered wills, 99:23 [FSL #94926].

<sup>37</sup> Registers of Hockering [note 34]: "Frances Fenwycke the sonne of Bartholomewe Fenwycke."

<sup>38</sup> Registers of Hockering [note 34]: "Bartholomewe Fenwycke the sonne of Bartholomewe Fenwycke."

wich) Sept. 23, 1632; priest, June 16, 1633. V[icar] of Rudham, Norfolk, 1635. Died during the rebellion.”<sup>[39]</sup> Bartholomew Fenwick was named in his father’s will as under 21.

3. *Margaret Fenwick*, bp. in Colton, Norfolk Apr. 1604.<sup>[40]</sup> Margaret was referred to in her father’s will as the child his wife was carrying; she was called goddaughter in her grandmother Margaret’s will.

- vi. *MARY SOWGATE*, bp. in Elsing 3 July 1568; m. (as his second wife) in St. Peter Mancroft, Norwich 12 Nov. 1594, *JOHN COOKE*.<sup>[41]</sup> John Cooke died between 12 Dec. 1637 and 25 Jan. 1637/8 (from the dates of his will; see below). He was rector of Wreningham, Norfolk, from 1588 to 1594, and rector of Colton, Norfolk, from 1589 to his death.<sup>[42]</sup>

Mary was named in her father’s will, which was also witnessed by John “Cook.” John Cooke, clerk, and his wife Mary were witnesses to the 1604 will of Rev. Bartholomew Fenwick (see above). John Cooke was called “brother Cooke of Colton” in the will of his brother-in-law Matthew Sowgate, which also left bequests to his three youngest children (unnamed). The will of “John Cooke of Colton in the County of Norff Clerke being sicke in bodie” was dated 12 Dec. 1637 and proved 25 Jan. 1637/8:<sup>[43]</sup>

to be buried in the middle of the chancel of Colton; 20s. to the poor of Colton; 20s. to the poor of Barford; to grandchild John Daveinie £20 when 21; to son-in-law Cuthbert Locke, clerk, all my books (except my Geneva Bible and Beza’s Testament in English); to wife Mary all my houses, lands, tenements, and hereditaments in Colton both free and copyhold, and 2 acres in Laningham (described), for her life; after her death those properties to my 5 daughters (Margaret the wife of Robert Spencer, Elizabeth the wife of Henry Locke, Sarah the wife of Giles Woods, Dorothy the wife of Cuthbert Locke, clerk, and Frances the wife of Joseph Brooke); residue to wife Mary, she to be executrix; signed by mark; witnesses Samuell Wither and William Bunne.

<sup>39</sup> John Venn and J. A. Venn, *Alumni Cantabrigienses*, part 1 (to 1751) (4 vols.) (Cambridge: The University Press, 1922–7), 2:131. “Rudham” was probably a mistake for “Runhall,” as he seems to have been vicar of Runhall, Norfolk, from 1633 through at least 1648. In the registers of Runhall, Norfolk, 1558ff, images on findmypast.co.uk, “Bartholomewe Fenwicke” signed the bottom of each page as vicar from 1633 through the page covering the end of 1648 through 1655. The handwriting of the entries changes between 8 June 1633 and 12 November 1633, perhaps indicating when he took over.

<sup>40</sup> Registers of Colton, Norfolk, images on findmypast.co.uk: “Margret Fenwick daughter of Bartholomew Fenwick late deceased & Margret his wyfe (*day not legible*).”

<sup>41</sup> Registers of St. Peter Mancroft, Norwich, Norfolk, 1538ff, images on findmypast.co.uk: John Cooke & Mary Sudgate. With first wife Margaret (\_\_\_\_) he had the following children baptized in Colton (Colton registers [note 40]): *Eunice* (Unica) (9 Oct. 1589), *Alice* (20 Dec. 1590), and *Susan* (23 Apr. 1592).

<sup>42</sup> CCEd [note 35]: John Cooke presented vicar of Wreningham cum Norland 19 Nov 1588 (followed by John Harrison on 10 June 1594); presented rector of Colton 12 Mar. 158[8]/9 (followed by Thomas Baldwyn on 27 Mar. 1638).

<sup>43</sup> Consistory Court of Norwich registered wills, 130:272 [FSL #166874].

Children of John and Mary (Sowgate) Cooke (bp. in Colton):

1. *John Cooke*, bp. 5 Apr. 1596.<sup>[44]</sup> He was not named in his father's will.
2. *Margaret Cooke*, bp. 9 Apr. 1598;<sup>[45]</sup> bur. in Merton, Norfolk 11 Dec. 1651 or 1 Nov. 1669;<sup>[46]</sup> m. *Robert Spencer*.<sup>[47]</sup> He was bur. in Merton 27 Oct. 1670.<sup>[48]</sup> The unnamed "children of Robert Spencer of Colton" were legatees in the 1627 will of Margaret's uncle Matthew Sowgate. Margaret and her husband Robert Spencer were named in her father's will. The will of "Robert Spencer ye senr of Mertine in the County of Norff yeoman" was dated 6 Sep. 1668 and proved 15 May 1671.<sup>[49]</sup>

to wife Margaret "if shee survive me" £3, bed and bedding, and her choice of cow out of my dairy; to daughter Elizabeth Spencer my tenement or cottage occupied by Nicholas Gaule in Merton after my wife's death, she to pay £10 to my son Robert Spencer; daughter Elizabeth executrix, she to pay all debts and legacies, the remainder to be equally divided between said son and daughter; witnesses Ralphe Ives and John Morchald.

3. *Mary Cooke*, bp. Mar. 1600/1;<sup>[50]</sup> d. by 1632;<sup>[51]</sup> m. as his first wife *Henry Daveney*. He was bp. in Colton 14 Sep. 1600,<sup>[52]</sup> and was bur. in Great Livermere, Suffolk 23 Oct. 1662;<sup>[53]</sup> he m. (2) by 1632 Dorothy Baxter.<sup>[54]</sup> Mary's son John "Daveinie" was

<sup>44</sup> Colton registers [note 40]: John Cooke sonne of John & Marye.

<sup>45</sup> Colton registers [note 40]: Margret Cooke sonne of John & Marye.

<sup>46</sup> Registers of Merton, Norfolk, 1564ff, images on findmypast.co.uk: "Margaret Spencer wife of Robert Spencer" (1651) and "Margaret wife of Robert Spenser" (1669). Perhaps Robert Spencer m. (2) another Margaret, who was living when he wrote his will (see below).

<sup>47</sup> They had the following children baptized in Colton (Colton registers [note 40]): *Anne Spencer* (bp. 21 May 1621) and *Robert Spencer* (bp. 26 June 1625), and the following children baptized and buried in Merton, Norfolk (Merton registers [note 46]): *Margaret Spencer* (bp. 10 Aug. 1630), *Anne Spencer* (again) (bp. 28 July 1633; bur. 28 Dec. 1650), *Ellen Spencer* (bp. 6 Mar. 1635/6; bur. 23 Dec. 1650), *Mary Spencer* (bp. 8 Dec. 1639; bur. 2 Feb. 1639/40), *Elizabeth Spencer* (bp. 13 Mar. 1640/1), and *Robert Spencer* (again) (bp. 18 Feb. 1643/4).

<sup>48</sup> Merton registers [note 46]: "Robert Spencer the elder, Householder."

<sup>49</sup> Archdeaconry of Norwich registered wills, 58:351 [FSL #173327].

<sup>50</sup> Colton registers [note 40]: "Marye Cooke daughter of John Cooke & Mary his wife."

<sup>51</sup> "Martha Daveny the daughter of Henry Daveny gent and Dorothe his wife" was baptized 3 Jan. 1631/2 in Colton (Colton registers [note 40]). Mary (Cooke) Daveny was certainly dead by 1637, when in her father's will she was not named among his daughters.

<sup>52</sup> Colton registers [note 40]: Henry Daveny sonne of Henry Daveny & Margerye his wyfe.

<sup>53</sup> Suffolk Burial Index (Suffolk Family History Society, 2019): Mr. Henry Daveny. The burial of Mrs. Dorothy Deveney, widow, occurred there 7 Nov. 1667. A monument to this family appears in the church of St. Andrew at Colton: "This monument is erected to the memory of Henry Daveny, the only son of Henry & Marjery Daveny. He was born in this village and died at Livermere Magna in Suffolk, where he was buried, October 23<sup>rd</sup> 1662, aged 61 years. He served the office of mayor of Thetford in 1639, and again in 1647. And of Dorothy, his relict, who was buried by the side of her husband November 7<sup>th</sup> 1667." An image of this monument can be seen on the Gravestone Photographic Resource site, grave #505818 ([www.gravestonephotos.com/public/gravedetails.php?grave=505818](http://www.gravestonephotos.com/public/gravedetails.php?grave=505818)).

<sup>54</sup> *The East Anglian*, n.s. vol. 1 (Ipswich: Pawsey and Hayes, 1885–6), 32: "... respecting Dorothy, the wife of Henry Daveny, Mayor of Thetford in 1639. She was . . . the younger daughter and

- named in her father's will; he was doubtless the "John Daveny sonne of Henry Daveny & Mary his wife" baptized in Colton 25 Nov. 1623.<sup>[55]</sup>
4. *Elizabeth Cooke*, bp. 19 Apr. 1603;<sup>[56]</sup> m. in St. Lawrence, Norwich 8 Aug. 1626, *Henry Locke*.<sup>[57]</sup> Elizabeth Cooke was called god-daughter in her grandmother Margaret's will. Elizabeth and her husband Henry Locke were named in her father's will.
  5. *Sarah Cooke*, bur. St. Saviour, Norwich, Norfolk 16 Dec. 1669 in;<sup>[58]</sup> m. *Giles Wood* (bur. in St. Saviour 12 July 1664).<sup>[59]</sup> Giles Wood, worsted weaver (apprentice of Erasmus Cooper), was made freeman of the city of Norwich 27 July 1632.<sup>[60]</sup> Sarah and her husband Giles "Woods" were named in her father's will. The will of "Gyles Wood of the City of Norwich gent" was dated 4 Nov. 1661 and proved 23 Sep. 1664.<sup>[61]</sup>

to son Giles Wood north part of my capital messuage or tenement in St. Saviour's, Norwich (occupied by Thomas Wormall), with chambers and items in the same (described) and orchard near house of James Tompson, to be held by son Giles and his heirs (for lack of which to son John Wood and his heirs) after the death of my now wife Sarah; to eldest son John Wood the rest of my said capital messuage (now occupied by me the said Giles Wood, Benjamin Dummont, Mary Demoline, widow, David Rotes, and Michael Owner); if son John Wood dies before 21 without heirs of his body, then that property to go to my daughters Sarah Wood and Ann Wood, after the death of Sarah my wife; son John Wood to pay to said daughters Sarah Wood and Ann Wood £100 after death of my wife Sarah (over time, described); to said son John Wood £300 when 21, and my weaving looms and presses and other weaving implements; to said son Giles Wood £300 when 21; to said daughter Sarah Wood £300 one year after my death; to said daughter Anne Wood £300 when 21; wife Sarah is to be executrix, she to have use of all goods

---

coheir, Rachael being the elder, of Stephen Baxter of Mendham, who died 20 April, 1607 . . . (details of his I.P.M.) . . . By a Fine . . . we learn that James Hervey, Esqr., and Rachael his wife and Henry Daveny, Gent., and Dorothy his wife, clearly the two sisters named in the Inquisition, had livery of land in Livermere, Dickleburgh, and Mendham, formerly the property of Stephen Baxter, Gent., whose heirs they were . . ."

<sup>55</sup> Colton registers [note 40]. There are significant gaps in the extant Colton parish registers, making a complete reconstruction of Henry Daveny's family by his two wives impossible. Missing are baptisms from 1605 to 1618 and 1642 to 1728, burials from 1573 to 1728, and marriages from 1573 to 1652.

<sup>56</sup> Colton registers [note 40]: "Elizabeth Cooke daughter of John & Marye."

<sup>57</sup> Registers of St. Lawrence, Norwich, Norfolk, 1558ff, images on findmypast.co.uk: "Henry Lock & Elizabeth Cooke."

<sup>58</sup> Registers of St. Saviour, Norwich, 1655ff, images on findmypast.co.uk: "Mrs. Sarah Wood Widow."

<sup>59</sup> Registers of St. Saviour [note 58]: Giles Woods.

<sup>60</sup> Percy Millican, *The Register of the Freemen of Norwich 1548-1713* (Norwich: Jarrold & Sons, Ltd., 1934), 163.

<sup>61</sup> PCC 106 Bruce (PROB 11/315/67).

and properties so long as she remains a widow; if she remarries, she to have £50 worth of goods chosen by her and the remainder to be divided among son John Wood and daughters Sarah Wood and Ann Wood; supervisors brother Gregory Wood and loving friend Robert Allen, gent. (they to have 40s. each); witnesses Susanna Seaman (by mark) and Gilbert Garrod.

The will of “Sarah Wood of Norw[i]ch widow being weake in body” was dated 1 Dec. 1669 and proved 25 May 1670.<sup>[62]</sup>

to son Gyles Wood £30; to daughter Sarah the wife of Thomas Shackle of Great Witchingham, Norfolk, £40, all wearing linen, all my apparel, and all my daughter Ann’s apparel; to said Sarah a silver porringer and a silver spoon; to grandchild John Wood £30 when 21; to son Giles the silver ewer tunne “wch his father gave him & also the silver cup wch his sister Anne gave him”; if son Giles dies before receiving his £30, my daughter Sarah to have £10 of it and the other £20 to said grandchild John Wood; son John Wood to be executor; witnesses John Mowet and Willm Sharpe.

6. *Dorothy Cooke*, d. after 5 Mar. 1676 (when she proved her husband’s will; see below); m. in St. Giles, Norwich 21 Oct. 1634, *Cuthbert Locke*.<sup>[63]</sup> He d. 13 Feb. 1676/7.<sup>[64]</sup> Cuthbert Locke was rector of Southburgh, Barningham Norwood (North Barningham), and Bessingham, Norfolk.<sup>[65]</sup> Dorothy and her husband

<sup>62</sup> Archdeaconry of Norwich registered wills, 58:48 [FSL #173327]. She alludes to the death of her daughter Anne, whose will was dated 30 July 1668 and proved 25 May 1670 (recorded directly before hers in Archdeaconry of Norwich registered wills, 58:47):

“I Anne Wood of ye City of Norwch singlewoman being sicke in body”; to mother Sarah Wood £18 per year for her life (the interest of my £300 in the hands of my brother John Wood); to sister Sarah Shackle £6 per year for her life (starting after death of my mother Sarah Wood) and after her death £50 each to my kinswomen Sarah Shackle and Mary Shackle (daughters of said sister Sarah Shackle); to brother Giles Wood £100 after the death of my mother Sarah Wood (if he dies without heirs, £50 of it to go to the child that my sister Sarah Shackle is now conceived with when 21); brother John Wood executor; witnesses Jane Wormell and Robert Warren.

<sup>63</sup> Registers of St. Giles, Norwich, Norfolk, images on findmypast.co.uk: “Cutbert Locke & Dorothy Cooke.”

They had the following children bp. in Colton (Colton registers [note 40]): *Mary Locke* (bp. 3 Dec. 1635) and *Sarah Locke* (bp. 8 Nov. 1640), the following children bp. and bur. in Southburgh, Norfolk (Southburgh registers, 1558ff, images on findmypast.co.uk): *Anthony Locke* (bp. 7 Dec. 1637; bur. 15 Jan. 1637/8), *John Locke* (bp. 29 Nov. 1638), *Elizabeth Locke* (bp. 28 July 1642), and *Thomas Locke* (bp. 19 Sep. 1643; bur. 3 Dec. 1643), the following child bp. in North Runcton, Norfolk (North Runcton registers, 1563ff, images on findmypast.co.uk): *Thomas Locke* (again) (bp. 15 Oct. 1646), and the following child bp. in West Winch, Norfolk (West Winch registers, 1559ff, images on findmypast.co.uk): *Sarah Locke* (again) (bp. 27 Feb. 1650/1).

<sup>64</sup> Registers of North Barningham (Barningham Norwood), 1538ff, images on findmypast.co.uk: “Cuthbert Locke Clark Minister of Barningham & basingham departed this Life ye 13<sup>th</sup> day of feb 1676.”

<sup>65</sup> *Alumni Cantabrigienses* [note 39], 3:97: “Lock, Cuthbert. Adm[itte]d sizar (age 16) at Caius, Oct. 25, 1625. S[on] of Peter, tanner, of Hockering, Norfolk. School, Elsing (Mr Robinson). Matric[ulate]d 1626; Scholar, 1629–31; B.A. 1629–30; M.A. 1633. Ord[ained] priest (Norwich)

Cuthbert Locke, clerk were named in her father's will. The short will of "Cuthbert Locke of Basingham in the County of Norffolke Clerke" was dated 3 Apr. 1676 and proved by his widow Dorothy 5 Mar. 1676/7.<sup>[66]</sup>

to be buried in Basingham churchyard at the east end of the chancel; to son Thomas Locke properties in Heinfer[?] that I bought from John Parnel of the same town; moveable goods to wife Dorothy, she to be executrix; witnesses Gulielmus Harley and Tho: Cooke.

7. *Frances Cooke*, bur. in St. Lawrence, Norwich, Norfolk 21 Mar. 1691/2;<sup>[67]</sup> m. *Joseph Brooke*.<sup>[68]</sup> Joseph Brooke, worsted weaver, son of William Brooke, was made freeman of the city of Norwich 13 July 1633.<sup>[69]</sup> He was bur. in St. Lawrence 15 July 1670.<sup>[70]</sup>

Frances and her husband Joseph Brooke were named in her father's will. Administration of the estate of Joseph Brooke, weaver, of St. Lawrence, Norwich, was granted to his widow Frances on 1 Oct. 1670.<sup>[71]</sup> The will of "Frances Brook of the City of Norwich widow" was dated 29 Nov. 1683 (with a codicil dated 30 Aug. 1687) and proved 27 Aug. 1692.<sup>[72]</sup>

to daughter Mary Gilbert, widow, £29 and forgiveness of debt of £35; to daughter Frances Riches £40 (if she dies before her husband, she can dispose of £27 of it however she pleases); to daughter Sarah £40 to be held by executor (the interest to be paid yearly to her husband Robert Slater for her lifetime, then the £40 to go to her daughter Sarah); to son Joseph Brook £43; to his wife a diamond ring; to son William Brook the bed I lay on and all my plate (except my rings); to his wife one of my rings; residue to said Joseph Brook and William Brook, they to be executors; son-in-law William Riches supervisor; witnesses Robert Hardy,

---

Dec. 23, 1632. R[ector] of South Burgh, Norfolk, 1634–45, sequestered. Examined and approved by the Westminster Assembly, Nov. 27, 1651. R[ector] of Barningham, Northwood, Norfolk, 1657–76. Will proved (Norwich) 1676."

<sup>66</sup> Consistory Court of Norwich registered wills, Wiseman 211, images from the Norfolk Record Office.

<sup>67</sup> Registers of St. Lawrence [note 57]: "Frances Brook Widow."

<sup>68</sup> Joseph and Frances Brooke had the following children baptized in St. Margaret, Norwich (St. Margaret and St. Swithin, Norwich, registers, images on findmypast.co.uk): *Frances Brooke* (bp. 19 Dec. 1638), *Sarah Brooke* (bp. 22 July 1641), and *William Brooke* (bp. 25 Nov. 1646). They were probably also the parents of the following children of Joseph Brooke baptized and buried at St. Margaret with no mother's name given: *Anne Brooke* (bp. 20 Sep. 1632), *John Brooke* (bur. 15 Aug. 1635), and *Mary Brooke* (bp. 14 June 1636). Joseph Brooke was probably "Joseph the sunne of Willm Brooke thelder" baptized at St. Margaret 27 Aug. 1609.

<sup>69</sup> *Freemen of Norwich* [note 60], 164. Joseph Brooke, worsted weaver, son of Joseph Brooke, was made freeman 22 Feb. 166[6]/7 (p. 177). William Brooke, worsted weaver, son of Joseph Brooke (probably the younger Joseph Brooke of the 1667 admission) was made freeman of Norwich 9 Sep. 1710 (p. 207).

<sup>70</sup> Registers of St. Lawrence [note 57]: Joseph Brooke.

<sup>71</sup> Archdeaconry of Norwich admons., 1668–1680, folio 54 [FSL #1596654 item 14].

<sup>72</sup> Consistory Court of Norwich registered wills, 142:129 [FSL #166892].



Peter Yemes, and Rich Warren. CODICIL: two sons and three daughters to have an additional £10 each; rather than residue going to sons Joseph Brooke and William Brooke, residue of goods to go to said William Brooke, and residue of money (if any) to be divided equally among all my children; witnesses Peter Yemes, Edwd. Thexton, and James Girling.

vii. ELIZABETH SOWGATE, bp. in Elsing 29 Dec. 1571; bur. there 26 Sep. 1573.

2. **WILLIAM<sup>A</sup> SOWGATE** (*William<sup>B</sup>*), buried in Elsing 15 Oct 1626; married there first, 25 September 1594, **MARTHA VINCENT**. She was buried there 31 January 1608/9.<sup>[73]</sup> He married, second, **ANN** (\_\_\_\_) \_\_\_\_.

William Sowgate was named in his father's will. He was an executor of his mother's will, which also mentioned William, Anne, and Martha Sowgate. For his own will, dated 9 October 1626 and proved 11 November 1626, see above. William "Sowgett" was a juror at the Elsing manorial court of 26 April 1626; at the court of 11 April 1627 his son William "Sowgat" was noted as the administrator of his estate.<sup>[74]</sup>

Children of William<sup>A</sup> and Martha (Vincent) Sowgate:

- i. ANNE<sup>1</sup> SOWGATE, bp. in Elsing 1 Jan. 1595/6; d. in Roxbury, Mass. 17 Mar. 1668/9; m. by 1617 Dr. RICHARD<sup>1</sup> PALGRAVE. He d. between 8 June and 8 Aug. 1651 prob. in Charlestown, Mass.<sup>[75]</sup> As noted above, William Sowgate's will named Anne, wife of Richard Palgrave, as his eldest daughter.

Children of Dr. Richard<sup>1</sup> and Anne (Sowgate) Palgrave:<sup>[76]</sup>

1. *Mary<sup>2</sup> Palgrave*, bp. in Fundenhall, Norfolk 25 Aug. 1618; m. *Roger Wellington*.
2. *Joseph Palgrave*, bp. in Fundenhall 23 Sep. 1619; nothing further known.
3. *Sarah Palgrave*, bp. in Hingham, Norfolk 22 Mar. 1620/1; m. *Dr. John Alcock*.
4. *Benjamin Palgrave*, bp. in Wymondham, Norfolk 19 Dec. 1622; bur. there 22 Feb. 1622/3.
5. *Benjamin Palgrave* (again), bp. in Wymondham 5 Feb. 1623/4; bur. there 13 Feb. 1629/30.
6. *Elizabeth Palgrave*, bp. in Wymondham 10 Apr. 1626; m. *John Edwards*.
7. *Hannah Palgrave*, bp. in Wymondham 28 Sep. 1628; nothing further known.

<sup>73</sup> She was perhaps the Martha Vincent, daughter of John and Anne Vincent, bp. in Honingham, Norfolk 21 Aug. 1574 (Registers of Honingham, Norfolk, 1561–1633, images on findmypast.co.uk).

<sup>74</sup> Elsing manorial court book [note 18].

<sup>75</sup> Uncited data from Anderson, *Winthrop Fleet* [note 1], 514–515.

<sup>76</sup> For cites to the Wymondham and Massachusetts data, and for further particulars on the children and their families, see the works cited in note 1.

8. *Rebecca Palgrave*, b. in Charlestown, Mass. 25 July 1631; d. prob. in Mass. by 11 Mar. 1668/9.
  9. *John Palgrave*, b. in Charlestown 6 Mar. 1633/4; m. *Mary Maverick*.
  10. *Lydia Palgrave*, b. in Charlestown 15 Jan. 1635/6; m. *Edmund Heylett*.
  11. *Bethia Palgrave*, b. in Charlestown 10 July 1638; d. 21 Aug. 1638 in Charlestown.
- ii. WILLIAM SOWGATE, bp. in Lyng, Norfolk 18 Dec. 1597;<sup>[77]</sup> bur. there 27 June 1601.<sup>[78]</sup>
  - iii. MARTHA SOWGATE, bp. in Lyng 22 Mar. 1600/1;<sup>[79]</sup> m. THOMAS EWING. Martha and her husband Thomas Ewing were named in her father's will.
  - iv. WILLIAM SOWGATE (AGAIN), bp. in Elsing 25 Apr. 1603; apparently d. bef. 24 May 1650, when his wife was called "vidua Suggett" in the burial record of their son. He m. CICELY (\_\_\_\_\_).

William Sowgate was executor of his father's will, as well as the 1627 will of his uncle Matthew Sowgate. As noted above, he was called administrator of his father's estate at the Elsing manorial court of 11 Apr. 1627; he was a juror at every subsequent court through 1634.<sup>[80]</sup>

Children of William and Cicely (\_\_\_\_\_) Sowgate:

1. *Elizabeth Sowgate*, bp. in Elsing 31 Aug. 1628; nothing further known.<sup>[81]</sup>
  2. *Hammond Sowgate*, bp. in Elsing 6 Feb. 1630/1; d. 24 and bur. in Shipdham, Norfolk 26 May 1650.<sup>[82]</sup>
  3. *Mary Sowgate*, bp. in Elsing 20 Mar. 1632/3; nothing further known.<sup>[83]</sup>
- v. MARGARET SOWGATE, bp. in Elsing 22 Feb 1606/7. She was named in her father's will as the youngest daughter. She was called niece in the 1627 will of her uncle Matthew Sowgate.

*Robert Battle*, FASG (battlegen@outlookcom), is an adjunct professor at Western Reformed Seminary in Puyallup, Washington.

<sup>77</sup> Lyng registers, 1538ff, images on findmypast.co.uk: "William Sowthgate the sonne of Southgate."

<sup>78</sup> Lyng registers [note 77]: "William Suggett sonne of William Suggett."

<sup>79</sup> Lyng registers [note 77]: "Martha Suggett the daughter of William Suggett."

<sup>80</sup> Elsing manorial court book [note 18]. He was last a juror on 23 Oct. 1634.

<sup>81</sup> She was perhaps the Elizabeth Suggatt who married Christopher Andrews in Great Witchingham, Norfolk 30 Mar. 1658 (Great Witchingham with Little Witchingham registers, 1539ff, images on findmypast.co.uk).

<sup>82</sup> Shipdham, Norfolk, registers, 1558ff, images on findmypast.co.uk: "Hammond filius vidua Suggett obijt May 24 sepultus 26."

<sup>83</sup> She was perhaps the Mary Suggate who married Christopher Hudson in Lyng, Norfolk 6 Oct. 1662 (Lyng registers [note 77]).

# An Update to the Later Life and Children of John Humfrey (1597–1651), Deputy Governor of Massachusetts Bay Colony

James Arthur Heffernan\*

---

John Humfrey's importance to the early Puritan settlement of New England has been covered numerous times in print, perhaps most recently in Robert Charles Anderson's *Puritan Pedigrees*.<sup>[1]</sup> In most cases, Humfrey's story concludes with his 1641 return to England and the discovery that two of his daughters, who remained in New England, were abused by indentured servants.<sup>[2]</sup> Comparatively little has been published about John Humfrey's later career and family composition from the early 1640s until his death in 1651. This article attempts to illuminate the final decade of John Humfrey's life, documenting his involvement with the Providence Island Company, his later military career, and providing a more complete accounting of his many children.

John Humfrey—son of Michael Humfrey, a burgess and member of Parliament for Dorchester, Dorset, and his wife, Dorothy Bawler—was baptized 24 July 1597 at Sherborne, Dorset.<sup>[3]</sup> He married at least four times: first to Isabel Williams, daughter of Brune Williams of Tyneham, Dorset;<sup>[4]</sup> second to Elizabeth Pelham, daughter of Herbert Pelham of Compton Valence, Dorset;<sup>[5]</sup> third to Lady Susan Clinton, daughter of Thomas, the third Earl of Lincoln;<sup>[6]</sup> and fourth to Mary (\_\_\_\_).<sup>[7]</sup>

---

\* The author wishes to thank Robert Charles Anderson, FASG, and Randy A. West, FASG, for their contributions and suggestions in the preparation of this article.

<sup>1</sup> Robert Charles Anderson, *Puritan Pedigrees* (Boston: NEHGS, 2018), 355–57.

<sup>2</sup> Robert Charles Anderson, *The Great Migration, Immigrants to New England, 1634–1635, Volume III, G–H* (Boston: NEHGS, 2003), 467.

<sup>3</sup> Andrew Thrush and John P. Ferris, *The History of Parliament: The House of Commons 1604–1629* (Cambridge, England: Cambridge University Press, 2010) 4:826–7; Bishop's transcripts for Sherborne, 1585–1880. Church of England, Parish Church of Sherborne (Dorsetshire), Baptisms, marriages, burials, 1585–1640 [FSL film #1239227 Item 8, Image no. 884]. John Humfrey's baptismal record does not name his parents. However, his father, Michael Humfrey, is recorded in Sherborne churchwardens' accounts in the period 1598/9 to 1599/1600 when he received a payment for "macking a passport." (Sherborne Churchwardens' Accounts, The National Archives, Kew; PE/SH/CW 1/71).

<sup>4</sup> Henry St. George and Sampson Lennard, John Paul Rylands, ed., *The Visitation of the County of Dorset Taken in the Year 1623* [Publications of the Harleian Society, v. 20] (London: The Harleian Society, 1885), 98–99.

<sup>5</sup> St. George and Lennard, *Visitation of Dorset 1623* [note 4], 57.

<sup>6</sup> Anderson, *The Great Migration* [note 2], 3:464.

<sup>7</sup> Mary Anne Everett Green, ed., "Volume 24: April 1652" in *Calendar of State Papers Domestic: Interregnum, 1651–2* (London: Her Majesty's Stationery Office, 1877), 203–230; *British History Online*, [british-history.ac.uk/cal-state-papers/domestic/interregnum/1651-2](http://british-history.ac.uk/cal-state-papers/domestic/interregnum/1651-2).

## Providence Island and Departure from New England

In Massachusetts Bay Colony in 1641, John Humfrey, the newly commissioned Governor of Providence Island, near the coast of present-day Nicaragua, arranged for a contingent of disaffected New England settlers to sail for the Caribbean; their dictate, communicated by the Providence Island Company, was to establish a stable, puritan colony away from the harsh climate and recent economic stagnation of New England.<sup>[8]</sup> Humfrey was a logical choice for governor. He was instrumental in the earliest colonization efforts in New England and his standing amongst Massachusetts Bay Colony settlers made him an effective recruiter. However, when Humfrey's New England group reached Providence Island, they found that it had been captured by Spanish forces.<sup>[9]</sup> Humfrey, a governor without a government, professionally and financially invested in the venture's success, faced criticism from the leadership of Massachusetts Bay Colony and returned permanently to England on 26 October 1641.<sup>[10]</sup>

Humfrey's failure at Providence Island marked a low point in a career that had placed him among the principal adventurers in the settlement of New England. Along with his father, Michael Humfrey, John was a founding member of the Dorchester Company and its one-time treasurer.<sup>[11]</sup> His involvement in colonization efforts later extended to the Massachusetts Bay Company, where he served as an Assistant and, briefly, as the Company's Deputy Governor, a role that he relinquished when he opted not to join the Winthrop Fleet in 1630.<sup>[12]</sup> Taken with his Providence Island misadventure, John Humfrey has the peculiar distinction of being appointed Deputy Governor and Governor of two separate English colonies, and in both instances, losing his position before he could govern.

In the early 1630s, John Humfrey married, as his third wife, Lady Susan Clinton, the daughter of the third Earl of Lincoln. The marriage established a familial connection between John and leading members of the Puritan colonial movement, including Isaac Johnson, married to Susan's sister Arbella; and William Fiennes, the Lord Saye and Sele; whose daughter was married to Susan's brother, Theophilus, the fourth Earl.<sup>[13]</sup> When the Humfrey family sailed for New England in 1634, John was well positioned to assume a prominent role in the colony's governance. Throughout the remainder of the decade, he served as an Assistant to the Massachusetts Bay General Court and as a magistrate in Essex County, where he held a large farm at Lynn.<sup>[14]</sup>

---

<sup>8</sup> Karen Ordahl Kupperman, *Providence Island 1630–1641: The Other Puritan Colony* (New York: Cambridge University Press, 1993), 146.

<sup>9</sup> *Ibid.*, 338.

<sup>10</sup> James Kendall Hosmer, ed., *Winthrop's Journal "History of New England," 1630–1649* (New York: Barnes & Noble, Inc., 1908), 2:34–35.

<sup>11</sup> Anderson, *The Great Migration* [note 2], 3:466; Frances Rose-Troup, *John White, the patriarch of Dorchester (Dorset) and the founder of Massachusetts, 1575–1648* (New York: G. P. Putnam's Sons, 1930), 451, 460.

<sup>12</sup> Anderson, *The Great Migration* [note 2], 3:466.

<sup>13</sup> Kupperman, *Providence Island* [note 8], 322, 325–326.

<sup>14</sup> Anderson, *The Great Migration* [note 2], 3:462–3.

Despite his important civic positions and extensive real estate holdings, by 1638 Humfrey had apparently become cash poor. When he prepared a return to England that year, the Rev. Hugh Peter petitioned the General Court for financial assistance on his friend's behalf, claiming that Humfrey's "estate had been much reduced."<sup>[15]</sup> Rev. Peter later wrote to John Winthrop that Humfrey had departed for England "with his son only with him," implying that Humfrey was unable to finance transportation for his family and servants.<sup>[16]</sup> Humfrey returned to New England in Spring 1639 and the following year received £250 from the General Court to "relieve his necessity."<sup>[17]</sup> By 1640, the colony itself had experienced an economic downturn as the once-steady stream of migration and capital from England slowed and the colony failed to produce a staple crop (as other colonies had with tobacco and sugar).<sup>[18]</sup> Against this backdrop, Humfrey promoted relocation to the Caribbean among his fellow New England settlers.

In March 1640/1, the Company of Providence Island, led by Lord Saye and Robert Rich, the Earl of Warwick, among others, commissioned John Humfrey to be governor of their colony at Providence Island:<sup>[19]</sup>

[The Company] are encouraged by his integrity and worth, to recommend to his acceptance the government of the island. Confess that the employment is below his merit, but do not doubt his readiness to engage in the undertaking . . . [We] hope he may be accompanied with many good families and persons, that the foundation of a considerable colony may be laid.

Beyond any personal betrayal that the Massachusetts Bay authorities might have felt at Humfrey's recalcitrance, his commitment to the Providence Island venture carried a spiritual significance as well. A movement to abandon colonization efforts in New England reflected poorly on its administrators but also suggested that the recent economic downturn was an act of providence and that the colony had somehow lost divine favor.<sup>[20]</sup>

When it was discovered that Providence Island was no longer under English occupation, Humfrey's group of beleaguered settlers returned to New England, where many had sold their properties at a loss, and where they faced criticism from those that had remained there. John Winthrop remarked with satisfaction:<sup>[21]</sup>

The passengers . . . being ashamed to return, would have been set on shore at Cape Grace de Dios, or Florida, or Virginia, but the seamen would not, and through the wonderful providence of God they came all safe home the 3d of 7ber following. This brought some of them to see their error, and acknowledge it in the open congregation, but others were hardened.

<sup>15</sup> Frances Rose-Troup, "John Humfry" *Essex Institute Historical Collections* (Salem, Mass.: Essex Institute Press), 65:229.

<sup>16</sup> *Winthrop Papers, 1498–1654* (Boston: Massachusetts Historical Society, 1929–1947), 4:62.

<sup>17</sup> Hosmer, *Winthrop's Journal* [note 10], 2:12; Rose-Troup, "John Humfry" [note 15], 65:301.

<sup>18</sup> Kupperman, *Providence Island* [note 8], 116.

<sup>19</sup> W. Noel Sainsbury, "America and West Indies: March 1641" in *Calendar of State Papers Colonial, America and West Indies: Volume 1, 1574–1660* (London: HMSO, 1860), 317–320. *British History Online*, british-history.ac.uk/cal-state-papers/colonial/america-west-indies/vol1.

<sup>20</sup> Kupperman, *Providence Island* [note 8], 321; Hosmer, *Winthrop's Journal* [note 10], 2:83.

<sup>21</sup> Kupperman, *Providence Island* [note 8], 323; Hosmer, *Winthrop's Journal* [note 10], 2:34–35.

With his reputation in Massachusetts Bay tarnished, Humfrey retreated to England.<sup>[22]</sup> Several of his younger children remained in New England under the care of servants who were later accused of abusing two of Humfrey's daughters.<sup>[23]</sup> It is unclear when the Humfrey children rejoined their father in England. Dorcas Humfrey, born to John's marriage with Susan Clinton, remained in New England as late as March 1643/4, when Rev. Timothy Dalton offered to adopt her, "she being the only child of John Humfrey still in Lynn."<sup>[24]</sup>

### Return to England and Later Career

In England, Humfrey was buoyed by the increasing power of his former Providence Island backers, many of whom emerged as central figures in Parliament in opposition to King Charles I during the English Civil War.<sup>[25]</sup> In this period, Humfrey staked his political ambitions on a successful military career in the parliamentary forces. In 1642, he was appointed sergeant major in command of land troops raised against the Irish Rebellion.<sup>[26]</sup> By the summer of 1644, he had attained the rank of Major in a Parliamentarian regiment of foot raised in Kent for Waller's Southern Association Army.<sup>[27]</sup> He later became the regiment's Lieutenant-Colonel, and by February 1645/6 he had been promoted to Colonel.<sup>[28]</sup> From the mid-1640s until his death in 1651 he maintained a residence in Westminster, London, appearing in tax rate books at Dean's Yard, St. Margaret's parish, in the shadow of Westminster Abbey.<sup>[29]</sup>

On 9 January 1648/9, Col. Humfrey was granted the office of Supervisor of Customs for the Port of London.<sup>[30]</sup> Later that month, on 20 January 1648/9, he acted as sword bearer at the trial of Charles I at the High Court of Justice, where the King was found guilty of high treason and subsequently beheaded.<sup>[31]</sup> His selection for the ceremonial role underscores the high esteem in which he was held by the principal architects of the English Commonwealth. Several

<sup>22</sup> Hosmer, *Winthrop's Journal* [note 10], 2:55.

<sup>23</sup> *Ibid.*, 2:54–58.

<sup>24</sup> *Winthrop Papers, 1498–1654* [note 16], 4:451–2.

<sup>25</sup> Kupperman, *Providence Island* [note 8], 342.

<sup>26</sup> "House of Lords Journal Volume 5: 30 May 1642" in *Journal of the House of Lords: Volume 5, 1642–1643* (London, 1767–1830), 91–94; *British History Online*, british-history.ac.uk/lords-jrnl/vol5.

<sup>27</sup> Stephen K. Roberts, "Surnames beginning H" in *The Cromwell Association Online Directory of Parliamentarian Army Officers* (2017). *British History Online*, british-history.ac.uk/no-series/cromwell-army-officers.

<sup>28</sup> "House of Commons Journal Volume 4: 26 February 1646" in *Journal of the House of Commons: Volume 4, 1644–1646* (London: His Majesty's Stationery Office, 1802), 454–455; *British History Online*, british-history.ac.uk/commons-jrnl/vol4.

<sup>29</sup> Westminster Rate Books, 1634–1900, City of Westminster Archives, [database online], *FindMyPast.co.uk*. Humfrey was taxed at Dean's Yard between March 1647 and September 1648 as "Coll Humfryes" and "Collonell Humfryes."

<sup>30</sup> "House of Lords Journal Volume 10: 20 December 1648" in *Journal of the House of Lords: Volume 10, 1648–1649* (London, 1767–1830), 635–636; *British History Online*, british-history.ac.uk/lords-jrnl/vol10; "House of Commons Journal Volume 6: 9 January 1649" in *Journal of the House of Commons: Volume 6, 1648–1651* (London: His Majesty's Stationery Office, 1802), 114–115; *British History Online*, british-history.ac.uk/commons-jrnl/vol6.

<sup>31</sup> Kupperman, *Providence Island* [note 8], 342.

months later, he was made trustee on a committee to appraise the personal effects of the deposed King and his family.<sup>[32]</sup> These prestigious appointments indicate that Humfrey had successfully rehabilitated his professional and financial reputation by the end of the 1640s. Perhaps because Humfrey's career in the earlier part of the decade was defined by his military service and not as an antagonist to the crown entrenched in Parliament, his notoriety has been largely confined to his earlier involvement in colonial enterprises of the 1620s and 1630s. Surprisingly, the *Oxford Dictionary of National Biography* does not include a sketch for John Humfrey despite his well-documented connections to colonization efforts and his later military and political participation in key events of the English Civil War.

### Death, Estate, and Family

Very few sources help clarify John Humfrey's family composition from the time of his departure from New England in 1641 until his death in 1651. Humfrey married for a fourth time in this period, but no marriage record has been found, and the maiden name of his fourth wife, Mary, remains unknown.

Prior to his death, Col. John Humfrey dictated a nuncupative will which devised the entirety of his estate to his eldest son, John Humfrey Jr., conditional to the maintenance and education of John Sr.'s younger children.<sup>[33]</sup> While prioritized in the will, none of Humfrey's other children were mentioned by name, or given distinct bequests, underscoring the apparent haste with which the will was created. Conspicuously absent from the will was Mary Humfrey, whom John married about 1645.<sup>[34]</sup> Her exclusion, and the events surrounding the nuncupative will's creation, spurred a series of chancery court cases between Mary and the children and associates of Col. John Humfrey who were present at his bedside in the days preceding his death. In several instances, Mary submitted her legal complaints in conjunction with her son, George Humfrey, John's youngest child, then an "infant" —under the age of 21.<sup>[35]</sup> The bills of complaint and corresponding answers of the defendants have not survived in all cases, but those that have provide a new accounting of the months and days leading to John Humfrey's death.

A 1654 bill of complaint from John Humfrey Jr. to Theophilus, Earl of Lincoln, mentions a September 1651 recognizance whereby John Humfrey Jr., as Col. Humfrey's eldest son, would receive the entirety of his father's estate in

---

<sup>32</sup> C. H. Firth and R. S. Rait, "July 1649: An Act for sale of the goods and personal Estate of the late King, Queen and Prince" in *Acts and Ordinances of the Interregnum, 1642–1660* (London: His Majesty's Stationery Office, 1911), 160–168; *British History Online*, british-history.ac.uk/no-series/acts-ordinances-interregnum.

<sup>33</sup> Will of John Humfrey, Colonel of City of Westminster, Middlesex, The National Archives, Kew; PROB 11/230/213, Prerogative Court of Canterbury, 297 Brent.

<sup>34</sup> *Humphreys v. Humphreys* (1652). Court of Chancery: Six Clerks Office: Pleadings before 1714, Bridges. The National Archives, Kew. C 5/387/104.

<sup>35</sup> "Infant, n. 1, sense 2," *Oxford English Dictionary* [online version] Oxford University Press, accessed September 2023, doi.org/10.1093/OED/1779385637.

exchange for a financial guarantee that he would direct a portion of the estate to the maintenance and education of his father's younger children:<sup>[36]</sup>

Your Orator . . . acknowledged and entred into a Statute of Three thousand poundes unto the Right Hon<sup>ble</sup> Theophilus Earle of Lincoln and Arthur Sgibb Esq<sup>r</sup> upon Special Trust and Confidence . . . [if] John Humfrey your Orators said father should then or within a short time after in his lifetime setle upon your Orator some Considerable reall estate in mesuages lands tenem<sup>ts</sup> Rents or other hereditam<sup>ts</sup> amounting to the value of the said Statute, or else leave unto your Orator at his decease some other considerable Estate in moneyes Goods Chattells or other estate undisposed of and not bequeathed or settled by his last Will and Testam<sup>t</sup> . . . [it was] to be disposed of for the use and benefit of the younger Children of the said deceased, the said John Humfrey your Orators father having then some hopes to advance his estate by reason of his Employ<sup>mt</sup> and leave the same to your Orator . . . if noe such estate of value descended . . . to him from his said father, then the said Statute to be void . . .

The advancement of Col. Humfrey's estate was likely tied to the positions he accepted in 1649 in the customs office for the Port of London and on the committee tasked with cataloging and selling the goods and personal effects of Charles I and his family.<sup>[37]</sup> For his service as sword bearer at the trial of Charles I, John Humfrey had also been granted a pension by the Council of State.<sup>[38]</sup>

Concerning the September 1651 recognizance, the Earl of Lincoln later testified that much of John Humfrey's estate was purchased using money derived from the dowry given at his third marriage to the Earl's sister, Lady Susan Clinton. The agreement was intended to ensure that the many children born to Susan (Clinton) Humfrey, who died about 1644, would not be left unprovided for at their father's death.<sup>[39]</sup> In a July 1652 answer to a complaint from Mary Humfrey, the Earl of Lincoln also noted:<sup>[40]</sup>

John Humphreys in the bill mentioned having heretofore taken to wife the ladie Suzan Clinton sister unto this Defendt and haveing then noe estate in lands to make a Jointure for the said Ladie Susan incase shee should survive him the said John Humphry nor to make Provision for such child or children as it should please God hee should have by the said Lady Susan did by one Obligation beareing date the fourth daie of June One thousand six hundred thirte and three, of the penall somme of three Thousand poundes become bound unto this defendt. with Condition thereupon to give devise or dispose unto and for the said Lady Susan his wife and for such and soe many of the Children or child by him on the body of the sayd Lady Susan begotten as should be liveing att the time of the death of the said John Humphreys soe much goods chattels and Personal estate as should bee of the full value of One Thousand and Seaven hundred poundes of lawful money of England in such sort as that they and every of them might quietlie enjoie the same and every part thereof after the death of the

<sup>36</sup> *Humfrey v. Earl of Lincoln* (1654), Court of Chancery, Six Clerks Office, Pleadings before 1714, Hamilton, The National Archives, Kew; C 7/406/82.

<sup>37</sup> Firth and Rait, *Acts and Ordinances of the Interregnum* [note 32], 160–168.

<sup>38</sup> *Humphreys v. Humphreys* (1653), Court of Chancery, Six Clerks Office, Pleadings before 1714, Bridges, The National Archives, Kew; C 5/387/126.

<sup>39</sup> *Humphreys v. Humphreys* (1652) – C 5/387/104 [note 34].

<sup>40</sup> *Ibid.*



said John Humphreys as in and by the said Obligation and condition more at large appeareth; And the said Defendt saith That the said John Humphreys had issue by the said Ladie Susan five sonnes, That is to say, Nathaniell Theophilus Thomas Joseph and Peter; and two daughters, That is to say, Dorcas and Sarah, who are all now liveing and about eight yeares since the said Ladie Susan dyed, after whose death the sayd John Humphreys (as this Defendt hath heard and believeth) tooke the Complt Mary to wife and had issue by her the other Complt George Humphreys.

The Earl of Lincoln's description of a 4 June 1633 financial agreement between himself and John Humfrey suggests that the marriage between Humfrey and Susan Clinton occurred near that date. Theophilus, Thomas, and Joseph Humfrey were baptized in New England at the church in Salem, where John Humfrey became a member in January 1636/7.<sup>[41]</sup> Assuming that the Humfrey children are listed in gendered birth order, Nathaniel Humfrey was likely born prior to the Humfrey family's arrival in 1634. Peter Humfrey was likely born in the period between the family's return to England and Susan's death in about 1644. Another child, Lydia Humfrey, baptized in Salem, 25 April 1641, must have been deceased by the date of her uncle's 1652 chancery answer.<sup>[42]</sup>

In December 1651, John Humfrey Jr., who had been dispatched by Parliament to the County of Cornwall, received a letter urgently requesting his return to London where his father lay sick and near death.<sup>[43]</sup> A group of friends and relations had already arrived at John Humfrey's Westminster bedside, including Capt. Benjamin Mason, whose 1653 chancery answer to a complaint from Mary Humfrey described the handling of John Humfrey's ready money:<sup>[44]</sup>

This Defendt about a day or two before the death of the said John Humfryes, being p'sent in the roome where the said John Humfryes lay sicke of the sicknes whereof he dyed, did at the request of the Children of the said John Humfryes or some of them the Defendt John Humfryes eldest sonn of the said John Humfryes being then absent and gone into the Country, doe the best hee this Defendt would to p'serve what goods and moneys he could for the benefit of the said Children and did thereupon about the tyme aforesaid and by the privity and direction of the said John Humfryes the father take and possesse himselfe of two or three baggs of money then being in a studdy in the outer roome where he the said John Humfryes lay sicke. The which said baggs hee the Defendt did immediatly seale upp in the p'sonse of Hewitt ffynes Esq<sup>r</sup>, Edward Tyson and Ann Chambers and others of the Children of the said John Humfryes.

<sup>41</sup> Anderson, *The Great Migration* [note 2], 3:462.

<sup>42</sup> *Ibid.*, 3:465.

<sup>43</sup> *Humfrey v. Earl of Lincoln* (1654) – C 7/406/82 [note 36].

<sup>44</sup> *Humphreys v. Mason* (1653), Court of Chancery, Six Clerks Office: Pleadings before 1714, Hamilton, The National Archives, Kew; C 7/396/38; *Humphreys v. Humphreys* (1652), Court of Chancery, Six Clerks Office, Pleadings before 1714, Hamilton, The National Archives, Kew; C 7/173/30; *Humphreys v. Humphreys* (1652) – C 5/387/104 [note 34]. On 28 June 1650, John Humfrey wrote a letter to the Committee for Compounding in support of his friend, Capt. Benjamin Mason, who was accused of being a Cavalier (Mary Anne Everett Green, "Volume G 252: August 1650" in *Calendar, Committee For Compounding: Part 1* [London: Her Majesty's Stationery Office, 1889], 286–302; *British History Online*, british-history.ac.uk/compounding-committee/pt1).

While not mentioned explicitly by Mason, it is possible that “others of the Children of the said John Humfryes” included Susan Holbrook, who was grouped with the other Humfrey children in Mary Humfrey’s initial bill of complaint in 1652 wherein she alleged that Humfrey’s adult children had conspired to exclude her and son George from Col. Humfrey’s estate:<sup>[45]</sup>

[They] intend to keepe you<sup>r</sup> Oratrix and the sayd George w[i]thout all maintenance or Livelyhood and amongst them or some of them to goe away w[i]th the whole estate and the better to effect the same the sayd John Humfryes the sonne by or w[i]th the privity of the sayd other p[er]sons and by practice and Combynatio[n] with Edward Tison, Susan holbrook, and With Anne Chambers doe pretend that ye s[ai]d John Humfryes, deceased, made a nuncupative will or that he spoke such words tendinge to a will whereby they would and intend to exclude your Oratrix and the s[ai]d George out of and from all reall and p[er]sonall estate of ye sayd John Humph[r]yes. . . . And to colour the same the s[ai]d John Humphryes the sonne by combinatio[n] w[i]th the s[ai]d Edward Tison Susan holbrook and Ann Chambers doth intend to produce them to suggest lett or Uphold such nuncupative will or words tendinge thereunto and they the said Susan and Ann beinge people of very meane poore and needy quality and condicion for some reward or promise of reward or benefit and the said Edward Tison being a brother in law unto the said John Humfryes the sonne doe intend and will [\_\_\_\_\_] set upon and maintaine such will or words of him the sayd John Humfryes . . .

By Anne Chambers’ recollection, on the morning of 16 December 1651, realizing that John Humfrey was unlikely to recover from his illness, William Strong, a cleric, asked him how he would dispose of his estate:<sup>[46]</sup>

And the Def<sup>t</sup> Anne Chambers saith that she being with the said John Humfryes the ffather the day before he dyed, and he being asked by the other Def<sup>t</sup> Mr. Strong (to the best of her Remembrance) how he would dispose of his Estate he then answered That he had found his sonne John (meaning the other Def<sup>t</sup> Humfryes) always a dutifull Child to him, and therefore he would leave all his Estate to him to be disposed for the Good of his Children; which wordes the said John Humfryes the ffather spoke betweene the howers of seaven or eight of the Clocke in the morning about sixteenth day of December to the best of her remembrance, there being then p[re]sent Mr. Strong Mr. Benjamyn Mason Susan Holbrooke Edward Tyson and some others this Def<sup>t</sup> doth not now remember, nor can expresse more certeyntie concerning the same.

John Humfrey died the following day, 17 December 1651, and was buried at St. Margaret’s Church at Westminster.<sup>[47]</sup>

On 19 December 1651, the House of Commons passed a resolution allowing John Humfrey Jr. to “have, receive and enjoy all such Salaries, Pensions, Profits and Advantages,” formerly belonging to his father.<sup>[48]</sup> However, administration

<sup>45</sup> *Humphreys v. Humphreys* (1652) – C 5/387/126 [note 38]; *Humphreys v. Humphreys* (1652) – C 7/173/30 [note 44]; *Humphreys v. Humphreys* (1652) – C 5/387/104 [note 34].

<sup>46</sup> *Humphreys v. Humphreys* (1653) – C 5/387/126 [note 38].

<sup>47</sup> *Ibid.*; Parish chest material for St. Margaret’s parish, Westminster, 1460–1898, Churchwardens’ accounts 1644–1657 [FSL film #1594661, Image no. 253].

<sup>48</sup> “House of Commons Journal Volume 7: 19 December 1651” in *Journal of the House of Commons: Volume 7, 1651–1660*, (London: His Majesty’s Stationery Office, 1802), 53–55; *British History Online*, british-history.ac.uk/commons-jrnl/vol7.

on John Humfrey's estate was not granted until 4 June 1653, pending a resolution to the protracted legal complaints of his widow and youngest child.<sup>[49]</sup> In John Humfrey Jr.'s answer to Mary Humfrey's 1652 bill of complaint, he directly addressed her exclusion from John Humfrey's estate:<sup>[50]</sup>

Nor doth this Def<sup>t</sup> beleeve that his father did intend any [estate] to her she having not to this Def<sup>s</sup> Knowledge either by any fortune or portion she brought to this Def<sup>s</sup> father on her Carriage towards him . . . but on the contrary she was not only a great preiudice to him in his estate but proved a very great disturbance to him. And did as this Def<sup>t</sup> beleeves voluntarily separate herselfe from the said Testator her husband for divers yeares together before his death and was not then reconciled unto him.

In a separate chancery answer, Benjamin Mason testified that he did not know that the couple were married or that John Humfrey had any children by her.<sup>[51]</sup> In answer to Mary's complaints on behalf of her son, John Humfrey Jr. expressed his intention "to the utmost of his power take care that said Complainant George shall have an equall proportion with the rest of the said Children out of the estate . . . such as shall be recovered."<sup>[52]</sup>

As John Humfrey Jr. began the administration, it was evident that his father's estate was insolvent, with debts greater than the assessed value of his personal and real estate by £125.<sup>[53]</sup> An account of Humfrey's debts and credits, attached by John Jr. as evidence to a chancery answer, detail John's precarious financial situation at the time of his death.<sup>[54]</sup> In addition to small debts, like those owed two vintners and a lutemaker, he owed larger sums to various individuals, including £100 to Dawbeny Williams, who managed in trust John's property in Dorset, and £30 to Matthew Craddock's widow, Rebecca Whitchcot. William Humfrey, perhaps a relative, was owed £2. John Humfrey's estate did not include any direct income from manors, farm rents or hereditaments owned solely in his name.<sup>[55]</sup>

John Humfrey's pension as sword bearer at the High Court of Justice was in arrears by two hundred eighty pounds at the time of his death, the payment of which was delayed until 1657.<sup>[56]</sup> John Humfrey Jr. ultimately assigned the pension to Mary Humfrey "on account of her poverty and charge of children," as reported on a petition for relief to the Council of State, submitted by the Lord Deputy and Council of Ireland. Mary was granted 40s a week until the pension, which had grown to £700, could be repaid.<sup>[57]</sup> It is unlikely that the pension was fully paid prior to the restoration of the monarchy in 1660. There is no further record of Mary Humfrey or her son George Humfrey, and it is

<sup>49</sup> Will of Col. John Humfrey – TNA PROB 11/230/213 (PCC 297 Brent) [note 33].

<sup>50</sup> *Humphreys v. Humphreys* (1652) – C 7/173/30 [note 44].

<sup>51</sup> *Humphreys v. Mason* (1653) – C 7/396/38 [note 44].

<sup>52</sup> *Humphreys v. Humphreys* (1652) – C 7/173/30 [note 44].

<sup>53</sup> *Humphreys v. Humphreys* (1653) – C 5/387/126 [note 38].

<sup>54</sup> *Ibid.*

<sup>55</sup> *Ibid.*

<sup>56</sup> *Proceedings of the Massachusetts Historical Society*, Second Series, 1899–1900 (Boston: Massachusetts Historical Society) 13:41.

<sup>57</sup> *Ibid.*

unclear if her “charge of children” included any children born to a previous marriage.

Like his father, John Humfrey Jr. also attained the rank of Colonel in the Commonwealth forces, where he commanded a regiment of foot during the Anglo-Spanish War.<sup>[58]</sup> He participated in the American Expedition to control and settle Jamaica in the late 1650s.<sup>[59]</sup> In an undated request, among others from the early 1660s, Thomas Nichols petitioned the King for a plantation at Liguanea, Jamaica, owned by Col. John Humfrey “deceased about a year ago, as great an enemy to his Majesty as he ever heard of, which is free from any one’s just claim.”<sup>[60]</sup>

No record has been found for John Humfrey Jr.’s marriage, but a 1661 chancery case reveals that he had a son, Pelham Humfrey, born about 1647.<sup>[61]</sup> In the case, levied by Pelham Humfrey, “an Infant of the age of ffourteene yeares or thereabouts,” against Dawbeny Williams, it is noted that “Col. John Humfryes dyed and left all his Estate to his Eldest sonn John Humfry the now Complaynant’s father . . .”<sup>[62]</sup> This chancery complaint corrects the seventeenth century antiquarian, Anthony à Wood, who claimed that Pelham Humfrey was “the nephew of Colonel John Humfrey, a prominent Cromwellian.”<sup>[63]</sup> Wood’s claim is also repeated in Pelham Humfrey’s entry in the *Oxford Dictionary of National Biography*.<sup>[64]</sup> Pelham, his name derived from the family of his paternal grandmother, Elizabeth Pelham, was a chorister in the restored Chapel Royal of Charles II and became a well-known baroque composer.<sup>[65]</sup> He died 14 July 1674 and was buried in the cloisters at Westminster Abbey.<sup>[66]</sup> His will, written three months before his death, includes a small bequest to his “cousin Betty Jelfe.”<sup>[67]</sup> It is unclear if Betty Jelfe was a relative through the Humfrey family or Pelham’s yet unknown maternal family line.

Edward Tyson served in the Parliamentary forces in Jamaica, attaining the rank of Lieutenant Colonel in the regiment of foot formerly commanded by his brother-in-law, John Humfrey Jr.<sup>[68]</sup> In May 1660, the Council of State granted permission for Mary Tyson to join her husband in Jamaica accompanied by two maid servants and a man servant.<sup>[69]</sup> Before or soon after her

<sup>58</sup> Sir Charles Firth, *The Regimental History of Cromwell’s Army* (New York: Oxford University Press, 1991) 1:xxix, 2:722–3.

<sup>59</sup> *Ibid.*, 2:722–3.

<sup>60</sup> *Proc. Mass. Historical Society*, 13:43 [note 56].

<sup>61</sup> *Humfreys v. Williams* (1661), Court of Chancery, Six Clerks Office, Pleadings before 1714, Hamilton, The National Archives, Kew; C 7/167/37.

<sup>62</sup> *Ibid.* In the chancery suit, Pelham Humfrey was represented by his guardian, Samuel Turberville.

<sup>63</sup> Peter Dennison, *Pelham Humfrey*, part of the Oxford Studies of Composers (New York: Oxford University Press, 1986), 5.

<sup>64</sup> *Ibid.*; “Humfrey, Pelham” *Oxford Dictionary of National Biography* (online ed.), Oxford University Press, doi.org/10.1093/ref:odnb/14154.

<sup>65</sup> Dennison, *Pelham Humfrey* [note 63], 5.

<sup>66</sup> *Ibid.*, 9.

<sup>67</sup> Peter Dennison, “The Will of Pelham Humfrey” *R. M. A. Research Chronicle* (Taylor & Francis, Ltd., Royal Music Association) 1969, no. 7, 28–30, citing Peculiar Court of Westminster, Will no. 553, Act Book 6, Folio 89.

<sup>68</sup> Firth, *Cromwell’s Army* [note 58], 2:724.

<sup>69</sup> W. Noel Sainsbury, “America and West Indies: Addenda 1660” in *Calendar of State Papers Colonial, America and West Indies: Volume 9, 1675–1676 and Addenda 1574–1674* (London:

arrival, Edward led an unsuccessful mutiny of his troops and was summarily executed by firing squad on 3 August 1660.<sup>[70]</sup> Litigation over John Humfrey's estate continued as late as 1656, when Dawbeny Williams entered a complaint against John Humfrey Jr., Edward Tyson and Mary Tyson, regarding payment due on properties held in trust in Dorset. Mary's chancery answer includes an account of the dowry promised by her father at her marriage:<sup>[71]</sup>

This Defendt further saith That by a Writeing under the hand and seale of the Complt beareing date the nyneth day of November in the yeare of our Lord One thousand six hundred fiftie one and mentioned to be made according to a Trust reposed in the Complt by the said John Humfrey the elder this Defendts father and by his directions he the said Complt did assigne and sett over and thereby Covenant and promise to assigne and sett over by good and warrantable assurance in the lawe unto the other Defendt Major Edward Tyson this Defendts husband and to this Defendt his wife and their heires for and in Consideration of a marriage portion with this Defendt and in full discharge and satisfaction thereof the full summe of Twentie poundes per anno in good and well paid ffee farme Rents yssueing lyeing and being within the Countie of Dorset.

Mary Tyson's account suggests that she married Edward Tyson shortly before her father's death in 1651.<sup>[72]</sup> If she had only recently reached adulthood, then it is reasonable to suggest that she was born to John Humfrey's second marriage, perhaps in the eighteen-month gap between the baptism of Jonathan Humfrey in May 1627 and the death of Elizabeth (Pelham) Humfrey in November 1628.<sup>[73]</sup> Alternatively, given the nearly five-year gap between Elizabeth's 1628 death and John's likely 1633 marriage to Susan Clinton, perhaps she was born to another, yet-unknown spouse of John Humfrey.

Anne Chambers is very likely the same Anne Humfrey, daughter of John and Elizabeth (Pelham) Humfrey, who was baptized at Fordington, Dorset, 17 December 1625, who later married William Palmes and John Myles, and applied for administration on her father's New England estate in 1681 as "the only surviving reputed child of John Humphryes."<sup>[74]</sup> In Mary Humfrey's 1652 bill of complaint, the author struck through the start of the name "William" Chambers and replaced it with "Anne," a potential clue to the identity of her spouse.<sup>[75]</sup>

While chancery suits hint at additional children of Col. John Humfrey present at his death in 1651, several remain frustratingly enigmatic. It is unclear which Humfrey daughter married Hewitt Fynes or what Fynes's connection might have been to the family of the Earl of Lincoln (who adopted the dual surname Clinton de Fiennes) or the Fiennes family of the Lord Saye and Sele.

---

Her Majesty's Stationery Office, 1893), 129–139; *British History Online*, british-history.ac.uk/cal-state-papers/colonial/america-west-indies/vol9.

<sup>70</sup> Frank Cundall, F.S.A., *Historic Jamaica* (London: The Institute of Jamaica, West India Committee, 1915), 88–89.

<sup>71</sup> *Williams v. Tyson* (1656), Court of Chancery, Six Clerks Office, Pleadings before 1714, Hamilton, The National Archives, Kew; C 7/436/103.

<sup>72</sup> *Williams v. Tyson* (1656) – C 7/436/103 [note 71].

<sup>73</sup> Anderson, *The Great Migration* [note 2], 3:464; Anderson, *Puritan Pedigrees* [note 1], 356.

<sup>74</sup> Anderson, *The Great Migration* [note 2], 3:464–5.

<sup>75</sup> *Humphreyes v. Humphreyes* (1652) – C 5/387/104 [note 34].

Susan Holbrook, who the widow Mary Humfrey grouped with John Humfrey Jr., Edward Tyson and Anne Chambers in her 1652 complaint, is never explicitly named as one of John's children, and her potentially clarificatory answers to Mary Humfrey's complaint have not been found. If she was a Humfrey daughter, she may have been born to John Humfrey's first marriage to Isabel Williams. If we assume that Mary (Humfrey) Tyson was the final child born to John Humfrey's second marriage (to Elizabeth Pelham), then the known baptismal dates for their other children leave very little space for them to have had another child. For this reason, the wife of Hewitt Fynes may also be assigned to John's first marriage.

In a 1938 article on the children of Thomas, Earl of Lincoln, who were involved in the settlement of New England, Meredith B. Colket Jr. noted that "John Humphrey has been stated to have had seventeen children."<sup>[76]</sup> While Colket's statement is unsourced, the evidence found in chancery proceedings now brings the number of possible Humfrey children to sixteen. The fates of most of the Humfrey children remain unknown. If Anne (Humfrey) (Chambers) (Palme) Myles was indeed the only surviving child of Col. John Humfrey by 1681, then the Humfrey children overwhelmingly died after their father but before reaching late adulthood. Future research should seek to solidify the placement of Humfrey's adult daughters within his earliest marriages to Isabel Williams and Elizabeth Pelham as well as locate proof that the children born to Susan Clinton and John's fourth wife, Mary, were deceased by 1681.

### Genealogical Summary

1. **JOHN HUMFREY** was baptized 24 July 1597 at Sherborne, Dorsetshire, England and died 17 December 1651 at Westminster, Middlesex, England.<sup>[77]</sup> He married, first, **ISABEL WILLIAMS**, daughter of Brune and Elizabeth (Churchill) Williams.<sup>[78]</sup> He married, second, **ELIZABETH PELHAM**, daughter of Herbert and Elizabeth (West) Pelham, 4 September 1621, at Salisbury, Wiltshire, England.<sup>[79]</sup> She died 1 November 1628 at Dorchester, Dorsetshire, England.<sup>[80]</sup> He married, third, **SUSAN CLINTON**, daughter of Thomas Fiennes, Earl of Lincoln, and Elizabeth Knyvett, about 1633.<sup>[81]</sup> She died about 1644.<sup>[82]</sup> He married, fourth, **MARY** (\_\_\_\_), about 1645.<sup>[83]</sup>

<sup>76</sup> Meredith B. Colket Jr., "The New England Children of Theophilus, Earl of Lincoln," *The American Genealogist* 15 (1938–39):124. Colket's article contains several inconsistencies, including the main subject, Thomas, third Earl of Lincoln, whose name is substituted by that of his son, Theophilus, the fourth Earl.

<sup>77</sup> Bishop's transcripts for Sherborne, 1585–1880, Church of England, Parish Church of Sherborne, Dorsetshire, Baptisms, marriages, burials, 1585–1640 [FSL film #1239227 Item 8, image no. 884]; Sherborne Churchwardens' Accounts, The National Archives, Kew; PE/SH/CW 1/71; *Humphreys v. Humphreys* (1653) – C 5/387/126 [note 38].

<sup>78</sup> St. George and Lennard, *Visitation of Dorset 1623* [note 4], 98–99.

<sup>79</sup> Anderson, *The Great Migration* [note 2], 3:464.

<sup>80</sup> *Ibid.*, 3:464.

<sup>81</sup> *Ibid.*, 3:464; *Humphreys v. Humphreys* (1652) – C 5/387/104 [note 34].

<sup>82</sup> *Humphreys v. Humphreys* (1652) – C 5/387/104 [note 34].

<sup>83</sup> *Ibid.* Note: In her bill of complaint, Mary Humfrey stated that "about seven years since the said John Humfries and your Oratrix intermarried."

Possible children of John and Isabel (Williams) Humfrey:

- i. DAUGHTER HUMFREY, m. HEWITT FYNES, Esq.<sup>[84]</sup>
- ii. SUSAN HUMFREY, m. \_\_\_\_\_ HOLBROOK,<sup>[85]</sup> living June 1652 (mentioned in Mary Humfrey's Chancery bill).<sup>[86]</sup>

Children of John and Elizabeth (Pelham) Humfrey, baptized at Fordington, Dorsetshire, except where noted:<sup>[87]</sup>

- iii. JOHN HUMFREY, bp. 11 Aug. 1622; d. bef. 30 May 1661 (his son's complaint in Chancery suit); m. by 1647 \_\_\_\_\_ (\_\_\_\_\_).<sup>[88]</sup>
- iv. ELIZABETH HUMFREY, bp. 23 Nov. 1623; m. (1) abt. 1641, ADAM OTTLEY;<sup>[89]</sup> m. (2) poss. St Mary Woolnoth, London 2 Sept. 1648, DANCER HANCOCK.<sup>[90]</sup>
- v. ANNE HUMFREY, bp. 17 Dec. 1625; d. Swansea, Mass., 17 Dec. 1693;<sup>[91]</sup> m. (1) WILLIAM CHAMBERS;<sup>[92]</sup> m. (2) WILLIAM PALMES;<sup>[93]</sup> m. (3) JOHN MYLES.<sup>[94]</sup>
- vi. JONATHAN HUMFREY, bp. Boston, Lincolnshire 3 May 1627.<sup>[95]</sup> No further record.
- vii. MARY HUMFREY, b. say 1628; living May 1660 (when she was permitted to join her husband in Jamaica);<sup>[96]</sup> m. abt. 1651, EDWARD TYSON.<sup>[97]</sup>

Children of John and Susan (Clinton) Humfrey:<sup>[98]</sup>

- viii. DORCAS HUMFREY, b. say 1633 (based on a 1642 record stating that she had been abused from "7 yeares to about her age of 9 yeares");<sup>[99]</sup> living July 1652 (her uncle's answer in Chancery suit).

<sup>84</sup> *Humphreys v. Mason* (1653) – C 7/396/38 [note 44].

<sup>85</sup> *Humphreyes v. Humphreyes* (1652) – C 5/387/104 [note 34].

<sup>86</sup> *Ibid.*

<sup>87</sup> Anderson, *The Great Migration* [note 2], 3:465.

<sup>88</sup> *Humfreys v. Williams* (1661) – C 7/167/37 [note 61].

<sup>89</sup> Regarding a petition to resolve a dispute between Joseph Armitage and John Humfrey, it was noted that "Mr. Ottley [was] Attorney for his father John Humphreys, Esq" (Massachusetts State Archives collection, colonial period, 1622–1788, 38B:215, 215a [FSL film #2322513, images 379–382 of 1709, FamilySearch.org]); Administration granted 1 August 1648 "on the goods of Adam Otley, late in parts beyond the sea, was granted to Elizabeth, his relict" ("Proceedings of the New England Historic Genealogical Society," *Register* 70 (1916):183).

<sup>90</sup> Nathaniel Lane Taylor, "Mackworths of Shropshire and Colonial Descendants" *The Genealogist* 35 (2021):170–172.

<sup>91</sup> Jane Fletcher Fiske and Margaret F. Costello, eds., *Vital Records of Swansea, Massachusetts to 1850* (Boston: NEHGS, 1992), 26.

<sup>92</sup> *Humphreyes v. Humphreyes* (1652) – C 5/387/104 [note 34], in which the name William Chambers was started then struck through in the bill of complaint.

<sup>93</sup> Anderson, *The Great Migration* [note 2], 3:465.

<sup>94</sup> *Ibid.*

<sup>95</sup> Anderson, *Puritan Pedigrees* [note 1], 356.

<sup>96</sup> Sainsbury, "America and West Indies: Addenda 1660" [note 69], 129–139.

<sup>97</sup> *Williams v. Tyson* (1656) – C 7/436/103 [note 71].

<sup>98</sup> Anderson, *The Great Migration* [note 2], 3:465; *Humphreyes v. Humphreyes* (1652) – C 5/387/104 [note 34].

<sup>99</sup> Nathaniel B. Shurtleff, ed., *Records of the Governor and Company of the Massachusetts Bay in New England* (Boston: W. White, 1853), 2:12.

- ix. NATHANIEL HUMFREY, b. say 1634; living Nov. 1652 (when he received £80 from Dawbeny Williams).<sup>[100]</sup>
- x. SARAH HUMFREY, b. say 1635 (described in 1642 as “a yonger sister of the said Dorcas”);<sup>[101]</sup> living July 1652 (her uncle’s answer in Chancery suit).
- xi. THEOPHILUS HUMFREY, bp. Salem, Mass. 24 Jan. 1636/7; bur. St. Margaret, Westminster, Eng. 4 March 1657/8.<sup>[102]</sup>
- xii. THOMAS HUMFREY, bp. Salem, Mass. 26 Aug. 1638; living July 1652 (his uncle’s answer in Chancery suit).
- xiii. JOSEPH HUMFREY, bp. Salem, Mass. 5 April 1640; d. Lisbon, Portugal abt. 1669.<sup>[103]</sup>
- xiv. LYDIA HUMFREY, bp. Salem, Mass. 25 April 1641; d. bef. July 1652 (her uncle’s answer in Chancery suit).
- xv. PETER HUMFREY, b. say 1642; living July 1652 (his uncle’s answer in Chancery suit).

Children of John and Mary (\_\_\_\_) Humfrey:<sup>[104]</sup>

- xvi. GEORGE HUMFREY, b. say 1646; living June 1652 (his appearance as a complainant in Chancery suit).

*James Arthur Heffernan is Genealogist of the Newbury Street Press. He may be contacted at james.heffernan@nehgs.org.*

<sup>100</sup> *Humfrey v. Williams* (1653), Court of Chancery, Six Clerks Office, Pleadings before 1714, Hamilton, The National Archives, Kew; C 7/396/93. In this case between John Humfrey Jr. and Dawbeny Williams, a schedule of disbursements notes that “ye pltfs brother Nathaniel Humfries” received £80 in November 1652. Nathaniel’s position in the birth order is based on a supposition that he was at least 18 years old when entrusted with the £80 noted above.

<sup>101</sup> Shurtleff, *Records of Massachusetts Bay* [note 99], 2:12–13.

<sup>102</sup> Arthur Meredyth Burke, ed., *Memorials of St. Margaret’s Church, Westminster* (London: Eyre & Spottiswoode, Ltd., 1924), 647.

<sup>103</sup> *Suffolk County, MA: Probate File Papers* [database online]. Joseph Humphrey, no. 611. AmericanAncestors.org, in which David Anderson testified in 1672 that “about three years Since, he being then in Lisborne, Mr. Joseph Humphrey . . . was killed and the Said Deponent did help Interr the body . . .”

<sup>104</sup> *Humphreyes v. Humphreyes* (1652) – C 5/387/104 [note 34].



# Mary Muzzey, Second Wife of Joseph<sup>3</sup> Tidd of Lexington, Massachusetts

Gale Ion Harris

---

Joseph<sup>3</sup> Tidd (1661–1730) and his three wives, all named Mary, lay buried in Lexington’s “Old Cemetery.”<sup>[1]</sup> The Marys’ maiden names were unknown to Lexington’s historian Charles Hudson in 1913,<sup>[2]</sup> although the third Mary had been identified much earlier as Mary (Haseltine) Stickney, widow of Samuel Stickney of Bradford [Haverhill], Massachusetts.<sup>[3]</sup> The identity of the first two Marys, the mothers of Joseph’s seven children listed by Hudson, apparently have remained unidentified. We present evidence that the second wife, Mary (died Lexington 9 June 1716/7, aged 32 years),<sup>[4]</sup> mother of six of the seven children, was a daughter of Benjamin Muzzey of Lexington.

For convenience of discussion, Hudson’s list of the children by Joseph’s second wife is shown as follows:<sup>[5]</sup>

CHILD TIDD, [d.] 3 Feb. 1703/4.

JOSEPH TIDD, b. 15 May 1707; m. DOROTHY STICKNEY.

SAMUEL TIDD, b. 29 May 1709.

SARAH TIDD, b. 19 Nov. 1711; m. JOHN BRIDGE.

BETTY TIDD, b. 29 May 1714; m. GERSHOM FLAGG.

MARY TIDD; m. DAVID CUTLER.

Recorded in the Middlesex County land records is a series of deeds whereby heirs of Benjamin Muzzey (1657–1732) of Lexington conveyed their interests in his property to his namesake son Benjamin of Sherborn, Massachusetts. By one of these deeds, dated 9 February 1732/3, Joseph Tidd, Samuel Tidd, David Cutler and Mary Cutler, Sarah Tidd, and Joseph Fassett, guardian to Betty Tidd, all of Lexington, conveyed to Benjamin Muzzey of Sherburn their one-tenth interest in the whole estate of “our honored *grandfather* Benjamin Muzzey late of Lexington, deceased.” The various acknowledgments to the deed include one dated 8 August 1734 by Sarah Tidd “now Sarah Bridge.”<sup>[6]</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> Francis H. Brown, *Lexington Epitaphs: A Copy of Epitaphs in the Old Burying Grounds of Lexington, Massachusetts* (Lexington: Lexington Historical Society, 1905), 156–57. Gravestone images at FindAGrave.com, memorial no. 16639779.

<sup>2</sup> Charles Hudson, *History of the Town of Lexington, Middlesex County, Massachusetts from its First Settlement to 1868*, 2 vols. (Boston: Houghton Mifflin, 1913), 2:697.

<sup>3</sup> Matthew Adam Stickney, *The Stickney Family: A Genealogical Memoir of the Descendants of William and Elizabeth Stickney from 1637 to 1869* (Salem, Essex Institute Press, 1869), 35.

<sup>4</sup> *Lexington, Mass., Record of Births, Marriages, and Deaths to January 1, 1898* (Boston: Wright & Potter Printing Co., 1898), 205; Brown, *Lexington Epitaphs* [note 1], 157, gives the death date as 9 Jan. 1716, aged 32.

<sup>5</sup> Hudson, *History of the Town of Lexington* [note 2], 2:697. All except Mary are found in *Lexington, Mass., Record of Births, Marriages, and Deaths*, 81 (births), 205 (deaths).

<sup>6</sup> Middlesex Co., Mass., Deeds, 36:309–10. I thank Travis Miscia for bringing this series of deeds to my attention.

These Muzzey grandchildren are clearly the children of Joseph Tidd by his second wife Mary. The obvious implication is that their mother was a daughter of Benjamin Muzzey. Indeed, Benjamin and his wife Sarah had a daughter Mary born in Lexington 13 July 1683,<sup>[7]</sup> whose husband was unknown to Hudson.<sup>[8]</sup> Mary Muzzey's birthdate in 1683 is a close match for the calculated birthdate, ca. 1684, for Joseph Tidd's second wife, Mary, buried in Lexington.

### Genealogical Summary

**JOSEPH<sup>3</sup> TIDD** (*John*<sup>2-1</sup>), son of John<sup>2</sup> and Rebecca (Wood) Tidd, born Woburn, Massachusetts, 20 January 166[1/]2,<sup>[9]</sup> died Lexington 26 December 1730, in his 70<sup>th</sup> year.<sup>[10]</sup> He married first **MARY** \_\_\_\_\_, born ca. 1671, died Lexington 23 January 1694, aged 23,<sup>[11]</sup> second **MARY MUZZEY**, born Lexington 13 July 1683,<sup>[12]</sup> died there 9 June 1716/7,<sup>[13]</sup> daughter of Benjamin and Sarah (\_\_\_\_\_) Muzzey,<sup>[14]</sup> and third 20 August 1722 **MARY (HASELTINE) STICKNEY**, born Rowley, Massachusetts, 30 April 1672, died Lexington 5 January 1730/1 in her 60<sup>th</sup> year,<sup>[15]</sup> daughter of Abraham and Elizabeth (Langhorne) Hazeltine, and widow of Samuel Stickney of Bradford [Haverhill], Massachusetts.<sup>[16]</sup>

On 5 April 1731, bond was set for Joseph Tidd as administrator of the estate of "his late father Joseph Tidd late of Lexington cooper, deceased." On 16 April, Joseph submitted an inventory valued at £367 10s. 6*d.*, which was contested as being incomplete by David Cutler of Lexington, "one of the heirs at law." On 21 June 1731, on "their own election," Joseph Fassett was appointed as guardian for the minor daughters Sarah Tidd, "in her 20<sup>th</sup> year," and Betty Tidd, "in her 18<sup>th</sup> year."<sup>[17]</sup>

Child of Joseph<sup>3</sup> and first wife, Mary (\_\_\_\_\_) Tidd:

- i. CHILD<sup>4</sup> TIDD, d. Lexington 23 Jan. 1694.<sup>[18]</sup>

<sup>7</sup> *Lexington, Mass., Record of Births, Marriages, and Deaths* [note 4], 55 (births).

<sup>8</sup> Hudson, *History of the Town of Lexington* [note 2], 2:478, Benjamin Muzzey sketch.

<sup>9</sup> Hudson, *History of the Town of Lexington* [note 2], 2:696–97, John<sup>2</sup> Tidd sketch; Edward F. Johnson, *Woburn Records of Births, Marriages, and Deaths, from 1690 to 1873* (Woburn, 1890), 259 (births).

<sup>10</sup> Brown, *Lexington Epitaphs* [note 1], 156; *Lexington, Mass., Record of Births, Marriages, and Deaths* [note 4], 205 (deaths).

<sup>11</sup> *Lexington, Mass., Record of Births, Marriages, and Deaths* [note 4], 205 (deaths); Brown, *Lexington Epitaphs* [note 1], 157.

<sup>12</sup> *Lexington, Mass., Record of Births, Marriages, and Deaths* [note 4], 55 (births).

<sup>13</sup> *Lexington, Mass., Record of Births, Marriages, and Deaths* [note 4], 205 (deaths).

<sup>14</sup> Hudson, *History of the Town of Lexington* [note 2], 2:478, Benjamin Muzzey sketch.

<sup>15</sup> *Lexington, Mass., Record of Births, Marriages, and Deaths* [note 4], 205 (deaths); Brown, *Lexington Epitaphs* [note 1], 156, misstates her year of death as 1750.

<sup>16</sup> Stickney, *The Stickney Family* [note 3], 33–35.

<sup>17</sup> "Middlesex County, MA: Probate File Papers, 1648–1871," files 22587, 22588, at American Ancestors.org. The guardian probably was the younger Joseph Fassett of Lexington (b. 1701), who had married Ammita Cutler, sister of David Cutler (Gale Ion Harris, "Patrick and Sarah Fassett of Billerica, Massachusetts," *The New England Historical and Genealogical Register* 177 [2023]:49).

<sup>18</sup> *Lexington, Mass., Record of Births, Marriages, and Deaths* [note 4], 205 (deaths).

Children of Joseph<sup>3</sup> and second wife, Mary (Muzzey) Tidd:<sup>[19]</sup>

- ii. CHILD TIDD, d. Lexington 3 Feb. 1703/4.
- iii. MARY TIDD, b. ca. 1705, d. Lexington 25 May 1797 in her 93<sup>rd</sup> year;<sup>[20]</sup> m. DAVID CUTLER, b. 20 Aug. 1705, d. 4 Dec. 1760 of smallpox,<sup>[21]</sup> son of Thomas and Sarah (Stone) Cutler.<sup>[22]</sup>
- iv. JOSEPH TIDD, b. 15 May 1707, d. Lexington 18 Sept. 1773, in his 66<sup>th</sup> year;<sup>[23]</sup> m. 31 July 1731 his stepsister DOROTHY STICKNEY, b. 18 March 1711/2, d. Lexington 23 Oct. 1790, aged 80,<sup>[24]</sup> dau. of Samuel and Mary (Hazel-tine) Stickney.<sup>[25]</sup>
- v. SAMUEL TIDD, b. 29 May 1709, “settled at Western (now Warren),” Mass.,<sup>[26]</sup> where he d. between 23 April 1787 and 23 April 1799 (dates of will and its proof). He m. (1) by 1737 LURY \_\_\_\_\_, and (2) by 1742 SARAH \_\_\_\_\_.<sup>[27]</sup> Samuel was still “of Lexington,” husbandman, in Dec. 1735 when he purchased 70 acres in Brookfield adjoining the Town of Western, but “of Western” in March 1753 when he sold a small parcel there to David Cutler of Lexington.<sup>[28]</sup> Samuel’s 1787 will names his wife Sarah, son Joseph (executor), and daughters Sarah Louis, Betty Weeks, Mary Commins, and Rebeckah Bliss.<sup>[29]</sup>
- vi. SARAH TIDD, b. 19 Nov. 1711; m. ca. 1734,<sup>[30]</sup> as 2<sup>nd</sup> of his three wives, JOHN BRIDGE, b. Lexington 1 Sept. 1700,<sup>[31]</sup> d. there 7 March 1776, ae 76,<sup>[32]</sup> son of Matthew and Abigail (Russell) Bridge.<sup>[33]</sup>
- vii. BETTY TIDD, b. 29 May 1714; m. (int. Woburn 24 April 1741) GERSHOM FLAGG,<sup>[34]</sup> b. Woburn 25 Jan. 170[1]/2,<sup>[35]</sup> son of Gershom and Hannah (\_\_\_\_\_) Flagg.<sup>[36]</sup>

Gale Ion Harris, PhD, FASG (1312 Basswood Circle, East Lansing, MI 48823, or harrisg@msu.edu), is Coeditor of The Genealogist.

<sup>19</sup> All except Mary are recorded in *Lexington, Mass., Record of Births, Marriages, and Deaths* [note 4], 81 (births), 205 (deaths).

<sup>20</sup> Brown, *Lexington Epitaphs* [note 1], 28.

<sup>21</sup> Brown, *Lexington Epitaphs* [note 1], 27.

<sup>22</sup> Hudson, *History of the Town of Lexington* [note 2], 2:146–47, David Cutler sketch.

<sup>23</sup> Brown, *Lexington Epitaphs* [note 1], 156.

<sup>24</sup> *Lexington, Mass., Record of Births, Marriages, and Deaths* [note 4], 205 (deaths).

<sup>25</sup> Stickney, *The Stickney Family* [note 3], 35.

<sup>26</sup> Hudson, *History of the Town of Lexington* [note 2], 2:697 (Joseph Tidd sketch).

<sup>27</sup> Births of daughters Sary “of Samuell and Lury,” and Mary of “Samuell and Sary “2nd w.” (*Vital Records of Warren (formerly Western), Massachusetts, to the End of the Year 1849* [Worcester, Mass.: Franklin P. Rice, 1910], 63).

<sup>28</sup> Worcester Co., Mass., Deeds, 22:284, 33:277.

<sup>29</sup> “Worcester County, MA: Probate File Papers, 1648–1871,” file 59297:5 at American Ancestors.org.

<sup>30</sup> She was “Sarah Tidd” in the 9 Feb. 1732/3 deed summarized above, but Sarah Tidd, “now Sarah Bridge” when she acknowledged it 8 Aug. 1734 (Middlesex Co., Mass., Deeds, 36:309–10).

<sup>31</sup> *Lexington, Mass., Record of Births, Marriages, and Deaths* [note 4], 8 (births).

<sup>32</sup> *Lexington, Mass., Record of Births, Marriages, and Deaths* [note 4], 167 (deaths).

<sup>33</sup> Hudson, *History of the Town of Lexington* [note 2], 2:56 (John Bridge sketch).

<sup>34</sup> Johnson, *Woburn Records* [note 9], 63 (marriage intentions), Gershom Flagg Jr. of Woburn and Betty Tidd of Lexington.

<sup>35</sup> Johnson, *Woburn Records* [note 9], 92 (births).

<sup>36</sup> Hudson, *History of the Town of Lexington* [note 2], 2:697 (Joseph Tidd sketch).

# The Whereabouts of Gabriel<sup>1</sup> Meade of Dorchester, Massachusetts, Prior to Emigration

Randy A. West

---

In an 18 April 2018 online posting to the Google Groups forum *soc.genealogy.medieval*, Vance Mead provided a link to his research of the English origin of Gabriel<sup>1</sup> Meade of Dorchester, Massachusetts.<sup>[1]</sup> Mead found the marriage of Gabriel Meade to Joan Frewin on 17 July 1628 in Henley on Thames, Oxfordshire, as well as a son Abel of this couple baptized and buried there in 1629 and a daughter Sarah baptized there in 1632.<sup>[2]</sup> As the immigrant had a wife named Joan and as Gabriel is an uncommon given name, it is reasonable to conclude that these records very likely pertain to the immigrant.

Gabriel immigrated to New England in 1637<sup>[3]</sup> and had several children baptized in Dorchester, including a daughter Sarah in 1643.<sup>[4]</sup> Therefore, if the records in Henley belong to the immigrant, the Sarah baptized there must have died before this date. In addition, Gabriel had a daughter Lydia who married James<sup>1</sup> Burgess in Boston, Massachusetts, on 19 October 1652.<sup>[5]</sup> Assuming she was age 20 at marriage, Lydia would have been born in England say 1632. As baptisms in the Henley parish register appear to be complete between 1632 and 1637, Gabriel probably resided elsewhere in England before emigration.

Fortunately, a record was created that indicates when and where Gabriel removed. In 1605 the borough court of High Wycombe, Buckinghamshire, a parish about 11 miles northeast of Henley, required that strangers coming into the town “had sureties who could guarantee the town against any future possibility that the newcomers or their children might make claims upon the borough’s resources for relief from poverty.”<sup>[6]</sup> In 1634 “Gabriel Meade, His wife & family, [a] Weaver” gave such a bond to the borough.<sup>[7]</sup> The following

---

<sup>1</sup> Vance Mead, “Re: WikiTree,” *soc.genealogy.medieval*, 19 April 2018 ([groups.google.com/g/soc.genealogy.medieval/c/FtRO6nWuSwo/m/bcurRPFkCAAJ](https://groups.google.com/g/soc.genealogy.medieval/c/FtRO6nWuSwo/m/bcurRPFkCAAJ)).

<sup>2</sup> Gabriel Mead, Mead Family Genealogy, Vance.Mead@welho.com ([sites.google.com/site/meadfamilyhistory/home/family/gabriel-meades](https://sites.google.com/site/meadfamilyhistory/home/family/gabriel-meades)).

<sup>3</sup> Robert Charles Anderson, *The Great Migration Directory, Immigrants to New England, 1620–1640: A Concise Compendium* (Boston: NEHGS, 2015), 224.

<sup>4</sup> Charles Henry Pope, *The Pioneers of Massachusetts, A Descriptive List, Drawn From Records of the Colonies, Towns and Churches, and Other Contemporaneous Documents* (Boston: the author, 1900), 309.

<sup>5</sup> Robert Charles Anderson, George F. Sanborn, Jr. and Melinde Lutz Sanborn, *The Great Migration, Immigrants to New England, 1634–1635, Volume I, A–B* (Boston: NEHGS, 1999), 497–498 (sketch of James Burgess), at 497.

<sup>6</sup> L. J. Ashford, *The History of the Borough of High Wycombe, From Its Origins to 1880* (London: Routledge & Kegan Paul, 1960), 122.

<sup>7</sup> Ashford, *The History of the Borough of High Wycombe* [note 6], 147. His sureties were “John Groves, blacksmith of Wycombe, Henry Nelson, butcher of Wycombe.”

entries in the parish registers and bishops' transcripts of High Wycombe were found for the family of Gabriel Meade:

4 April 1635	Baptism	Lydia Meade filia Gabr[ <i>faint</i> ] et Joan[ <i>faint</i> ] ux <sup>[8]</sup>
25 March 1636	Burial	Sarah Meade fil: Gabrieli <sup>[9]</sup>

The above information is used in the following genealogical summary for Gabriel<sup>1</sup> Meade.

### Genealogical Summary

**GABRIEL<sup>1</sup> MEADE** was baptized in Henley on Thames, Oxfordshire, on 4 October 1590,<sup>[10]</sup> son of Thomas<sup>A</sup> and Emlin (Carter) Meade.<sup>[11]</sup> He married there on 17 July 1628 **JOAN FREWIN**.<sup>[12]</sup> About 1637 “Gabriel Meade” and “Joanna Meade” were admitted to the Dorchester, Massachusetts, church.<sup>[13]</sup> Gabriel became a freeman of the Massachusetts Bay Colony on 2 May 1638.<sup>[14]</sup> He died in Dorchester on 12 May 1666 as “Gabriel Mede aged about 77.”<sup>[15]</sup> The will of “Gabriell Mead of dorchester” dated 15 January 1654[5] and proved 17 July 1667 gave to “Joanna my louinge wife . . . my sonne Isreall . . . my sonne dauid . . . my daughter lidia . . . my daughters Experience Sarah and patient.”<sup>[16]</sup> His widow was married again after 4 December 1668 to John<sup>1</sup> Eddy<sup>[17]</sup> and she died in Watertown, Massachusetts, on 25 August 1683 as “Johanna Eddy wife of John Eddy Sen[ior] . . . Aged abought 80 years.”<sup>[18]</sup>

Children of Gabriel<sup>1</sup> and Joan (Frewin) Meade, iv–viii, bp. Dorchester:

- i. ABEL<sup>2</sup> MEADE, bp. Henley on Thames, 16 Dec. 1629,<sup>[19]</sup> bur. there, 22 Dec. 1629.<sup>[20]</sup>

<sup>8</sup> High Wycombe, Buckinghamshire, bishop's transcripts, 1590–1730, Buckinghamshire Archives, D-A/T/193 [FSL DGS 8008437, image 919].

<sup>9</sup> High Wycombe, Buckinghamshire, parish burial register, 1612–1682, Buckinghamshire Archives, PR\_249/1/33 [FSL DGS 8081896, image 87].

<sup>10</sup> St. Mary, Henley on Thames, Oxfordshire, parish register, 1558–1734, *Oxfordshire, England, Church of England Baptism, Marriages, and Burials, 1538–1812*, database at Ancestry.com, image 33 of 171, “Gabriell Meades filius Thomæ.”

<sup>11</sup> See note 2.

<sup>12</sup> Henley on Thames, parish register, 1558–1734 [note 10], image 86, “Gabrielus Meades et Jona frewin.”

<sup>13</sup> *Records of the First Church at Dorchester in New England, 1636–1734* (Boston: George H. Ellis, 1891), 3.

<sup>14</sup> Nathaniel B. Shurtleff, *Records of the Governor and Company of the Massachusetts Bay in New England*, 5 vols. in 6 (Boston: William White, 1853–1854), 1:374.

<sup>15</sup> [Twenty-First] *Report of the Record Commissioners of the City of Boston Containing Dorchester Births, Marriages, and Deaths to the End of 1825* (Boston: Rockwell and Churchill, 1891), 27.

<sup>16</sup> Suffolk County, Massachusetts, probate files, case #455 [FSL DGS 102840312, image 330].

<sup>17</sup> Robert Charles Anderson, *The Winthrop Fleet: Massachusetts Bay Company Immigrants to New England, 1629–1630* (Boston: NEHGS, 2012), 289–294 (sketch of John Eddy), at 292. On 4 Dec. 1668 at a meeting of the Dorchester selectmen paid £3 “to the Widdow Mead for the worke at the meeting house” £3 (*Fourth Report of the Record Commissioners of the City of Boston: Dorchester Town Records*, 3rd ed. [Boston: Rockwell and Churchill, 1896], 152).

<sup>18</sup> “Records of Births, Deaths and Marriages: First Book and Supplement,” section three, Watertown Records (Watertown, Mass.: Historical Society, 1894), 53.

<sup>19</sup> Henley on Thames, parish register, 1558–1734 [note 10], image 90, “Abell Meades Son of Gabrell.”

<sup>20</sup> *Ibid.*

- ii. SARAH MEADE, bp. Henley on Thames, 30 Aug. 1632,<sup>[21]</sup> bur. High Wycombe, 25 March 1636.
- iii. LYDIA MEADE, bp. High Wycombe, 4 April 1635; m. (1) Boston, Mass., 19 Oct. 1652, JAMES<sup>1</sup> BURGESS,<sup>[22]</sup> who died by 31 Jan. 1670[/1] (his inventory).<sup>[23]</sup> Lydia m. (2) by 18 Aug. 1679, JOHN SMITH.<sup>[24]</sup>
- iv. ISRAEL MEADE, bp. 2 Sept. 1639,<sup>[25]</sup> d. Lexington, Mass., 6 Aug. 1714,<sup>[26]</sup> m. Cambridge, Mass., 26 Feb. 1669[/70], MARY HALL,<sup>[27]</sup> d. Lexington, in Oct. 1692,<sup>[28]</sup> daughter of Thomas<sup>1</sup> Hall.<sup>[29]</sup>
- v. EXPERIENCE MEADE, bp. 23 Jan. 1641/2,<sup>[30]</sup> m. Dorchester, 4 Dec. 1663, JABEZ HEATON,<sup>[31]</sup> d. Boston, 16 May 1676,<sup>[32]</sup> son of Nathaniel<sup>1</sup> Heaton.<sup>[33]</sup>

<sup>21</sup> Henley on Thames, parish register, 1558–1734 [note 10], image 96, “Sara Meades Daughter of Gabril.”

<sup>22</sup> “Early Records of Boston,” *Register* 10 (1857):223, “James Burgesse was married to Lydia Meed.” See also Anderson, Sanborn and Sanborn, *The Great Migration, 1634–1635, Volume I, A–B* [note 5], 497.

<sup>23</sup> Suffolk, Massachusetts, probate files, case #559 [FSL DGS 102840312, image 863], Liddia Burges made Oath in Court . . . that this is a Tru Inuentory of ye Estate of her Late husband James Burges.”

<sup>24</sup> According to [*Seventh*] *Report of the Record Commissioners of the City of Boston, Containing the Boston Records From 1660 to 1701* (Boston: Rockwell and Churchill, 1881), 130, “[on 18 Aug. 1679] whereas the Inhabitants of this towne at a publique meetinge vpon the 9th March 1662–3 did order the Selectmen to lay a p[ar]te of ground out of the wast land to James Burgis to set a house vpon, w[hi]ch was done the 27th of Aprill, 1663 accordinge to a record thereof in this booke folio B. Now vpon the motion and ernest request of Lida the Relict & Executrix to the estate of the said James Burgis deceased (now the wife of John Smith) The said lands then layd out to James Burgis deceased, is now granted and confirmed to James Burgis the sonn of ye afores[ai]d James deceased . . . provided the said James Burgis . . . vpon consideration of 10ld in mony & a p[ar]cell of land sould and d[eliver]ed to the s[ai]d John Smith & Lydia his wife, for the vse of her & the rest of her Children, accordinge to a deed of sale now signed & sealed . . . by the s[ai]d James Burgis & Sarah his wife dated 19th of Augt 1679.” Based on this record, James Burgess, who married a wife named Sarah, is an additional child of James<sup>1</sup> Burgess (Anderson, Sanborn and Sanborn, *The Great Migration, 1634–1635, Volume I, A–B* [note 5], 497–498).

<sup>25</sup> *Records of the First Church at Dorchester* [note 13], 151, “Israel Mead” with later annotation of “went to Watertowne.”

<sup>26</sup> *Lexington, Mass: Record of Births, Marriages and Deaths To January 1, 1898* (Boston: Wright & Potter, 1898), 186.

<sup>27</sup> *Vital Records of Cambridge, Massachusetts, to the Year 1850*, 2 vols. (Boston: NEHGS, 1914–1915), 2:268, “Mede, Israel and Mary Hall.”

<sup>28</sup> *Lexington, Mass: Record of Births, Marriages and Deaths* [note 26], 186, “Meade, Israel’s wf.”

<sup>29</sup> Lucius R. Paige, *History of Cambridge, Massachusetts, 1630–1877, With a Genealogical Register* (Boston: Houghton and Co. 1877), 570. Middlesex County, Massachusetts, court books, vol. 6, p. 111 [FSL DGS 7902601, image 554], “[on 6 Oct. 1691] administration [was] granted . . . to Stephen ffrances Israel Meads & Gershom Cutter on ye Estate of Thomas Hall late of Cambridge Dece[ase]d Intestate.”

<sup>30</sup> *Records of the First Church at Dorchester* [note 13], 154, “Experience Mead”.

<sup>31</sup> *Dorchester Births, Marriages, and Deaths* [note 15], 21, “Jabez Eaton [*sic*] Married to Experience Mede.”

<sup>32</sup> According to *The Diary of Samuel Sewall, 1674–1729*, M. Halsey Thomas, ed., 2 vols. (New York: Farrar, Strauss and Giroux, 1973), 1:16, “[on 16 May 1676] as we came from the Funeral, we saw an huddle of persons, who were bringing Jabez Eaton that died just then in the street.” See also Douglas Richardson and Dean Crawford Smith, “English Ancestry of Nathaniel<sup>1</sup> Heaton of Boston, Mass., and His Nephew, James<sup>2</sup> Heaton of New Haven, Conn.,” *Register* 152 (1998):430–452, at 451.

<sup>33</sup> Robert Charles Anderson, *The Great Migration: Immigrants to New England, 1634–1635, Volume III, G–H* (Boston: NEHGS, 2003), 303–305, sketch of Nathaniel Heaton, at 305.

- vi. SARAH MEADE (again), bp. 4 Feb. 1643/4,<sup>[34]</sup> living 30 Dec. 1711 (exhibited her husband's will);<sup>[35]</sup> m. Dorchester, 31 [sic] Nov. 1664, SAMUEL EDDY,<sup>[36]</sup> d. Watertown, 22 Nov. 1711,<sup>[37]</sup> son of John<sup>1</sup> Eddy.<sup>[38]</sup>
- vii. PATIENCE MEADE, bp. 29 March 1646,<sup>[39]</sup> d. Dorchester, 22 May 1670;<sup>[40]</sup> m. there, 28 April 1669, MATTHIAS EVANS,<sup>[41]</sup> son of Richard<sup>1</sup> Evans.<sup>[42]</sup>
- viii. DAVID MEADE, bp. 7 July 1650;<sup>[43]</sup> d. Woburn, Mass., in Oct. 1727;<sup>[44]</sup> m. Watertown or Cambridge, 24 or 26 Sept. 1675, HANNAH WARREN,<sup>[45]</sup> daughter of Daniel<sup>2</sup> (John<sup>1</sup>) Warren.<sup>[46]</sup>

Randy A. West, FASG (746west@comcast.net), has an interest in discovering the English origins of seventeenth-century immigrants to New England.

- 
- <sup>34</sup> *Records of the First Church at Dorchester* [note 13], 156, "Sarah Mead" with later annotation of "married to mr Burgesse of Boston," clearly a mistake for her sister Lydia.
- <sup>35</sup> Middlesex County, Massachusetts, probate files, case #6829 [FSL DGS 7553430, image 220], will of "Samuell Eddi of Watertown" dated 6 Aug. 1702 and on 30 Dec. 1711, and "exhibited . . . by Sarah Eddi [the] Widow & executrix."
- <sup>36</sup> *Dorchester Births, Marriages, and Deaths* [note 15], 21, "Samuel Eddy married to Sarah Mede."
- <sup>37</sup> "Record of Births, Deaths and Marriages, Second Book" in *Watertown Records, Comprising The Third Book of Town Proceedings and The Second Book of Births, Marriages and Deaths, to End of 1737* (Watertown: Fred G. Barker, 1900), 43.
- <sup>38</sup> Anderson, *The Winthrop Fleet* [note 17], 293.
- <sup>39</sup> *Records of the First Church at Dorchester* [note 13], 158, "Patience Mead."
- <sup>40</sup> *Dorchester Births, Marriages, and Deaths* [note 15], 27, "Patience the Wife of Matthias Evans."
- <sup>41</sup> *Dorchester Births, Marriages, and Deaths* [note 15], 22, "Matthias Evans was married unto Patience Mede."
- <sup>42</sup> *History of the Town of Dorchester, Massachusetts* (Boston: Ebenezer Clapp, Jr., 1859), 117.
- <sup>43</sup> *Records of the First Church at Dorchester* [note 13], 160, "David Mead."
- <sup>44</sup> Woburn, Massachusetts, vital records, 1641–1767 [FSL DGS 7011120, image 374], "Dauid Meads died the [blank] of october 1727." Also, Edward F. Johnson, *Woburn Records of Births, Deaths, and Marriages, From 1640 to 1873: Part II, Deaths* (Woburn: Andrews, Cutler and Co., 189), 128.
- <sup>45</sup> "Records of Births, Deaths and Marriages: First Book and Supplement" in *Watertown Records* [note 18], 40 (24th). *Vital Records of Cambridge, Massachusetts* [note 27], 2:268 (26th).
- <sup>46</sup> Dean Crawford Smith, *The Ancestry of Eva Belle Kempton, 1878–1908: Part I, The Ancestry of Warren Francis Kempton, 1817–1879*, Melinde Lutz Sanborn, ed. (Boston: NEHGS, 1996), 475, 479. This work states that David m. (2) Watertown, 5 Feb. 1707/8, Hannah Smith. But this marriage was for his probable son David. This David and Hannah had eight children: Joshua (b. 1709/10), Moses (b. 1711), Lydia (b. 1713), Josiah (b. 1715), Matthew (b. 1717), Susanna (b. 1719), Hopestill (b. 1721), and David (b. 1723). The first two born in Cambridge (*Vital Records of Cambridge, Massachusetts* [note 27], 1:483) and the others born in Watertown "Records of Births, Marriages, and Deaths, Second Book" [note 37], 55 [Lydia and Josiah], 71 [Matthew and Susanna], 72 [Hopestill], 74 [David]). The will of "David Mead of Waltham in the County of Middlesex . . . House wright" dated 6 Sept. 1765 and proved 31 March 1767 gave bequests to "my Eldest son Joshua Mead . . . y Son Mathew Mead . . . my Son David Mead . . . my Daughter Susanna Biglow . . . my son Moses Mead" (Middlesex County, Mass., probate files, case #14916 [FSL DGS 7553702, images 984–986]).

## STATEMENT OF OWNERSHIP, MANAGEMENT AND CIRCULATION

(Required by 39 U.S.C. 3685)

1. Publication title: *The New England Historical and Genealogical Register*
2. Publication number: 0028-4785
3. Filing date: 30 September 2023
4. Issue frequency: quarterly
5. Number of issues published annually: 4
6. Annual subscription price: \$20.00
9. Owner/Publisher: New England Historic Genealogical Society  
99-101 Newbury Street, Boston, MA 02116-3007  
(Suffolk County)

Editor: Henry B. Hoff, 99-101 Newbury Street, Boston, MA 02116-3007

11. There are no known bondholders, mortgagees, or other security holders.
12. The purpose, function, and nonprofit status of this organization and the exempt status for Federal income tax purposes have not changed during the preceding 12 months.

	<i>average</i>	<i>single issue nearest filing</i>
A. Total no. copies printed (net press run)	5,802	5,922
B. Paid circulation (mail subscription only)	5,772	5,540
C. Total paid circulation	5,772	5,540
D. Free distribution (samples, complimentary and other free copies)	30	30
F. Total distribution	5,972	5,570
G. Copies not distributed	150	382
H. Total of F and G	5,802*	5,922**
I. Percent Paid	99.8	99.8

I certify that all information furnished on this form is true and complete.

*Henry B. Hoff, Editor*

\* This figure is incorrect as reported. The correct total is 6,122.

\*\* This figure is incorrect as reported. The correct total is 5,952.



# The Rotches and the Rodmans: A Tale of New Bedford Quakerism

## Part 4: The Fall Out

Rhonda R. McClure

---

(concluded from 177 [2023]:415)

As Joseph R. Anthony hypothesized in his diary, after the result of the meeting on 25th 3 mo. 1824 which denied the elderships of Elizabeth Rodman and Mary Rotch, “it will most likely cause a separation in the Society.”<sup>[1]</sup> Indeed, the New Bedford Monthly Meeting was only getting started with these two women when it came to how they believed the members of their Meeting should behave.

Not surprisingly, there were a number of relatives of the two sisters who felt that their treatment was uncalled for and were against the motion to remove them as Elders. As mentioned in the last article, there were forty-six men identified as participating in the ongoing discussion of the situation, with twenty-three of them believing that Elizabeth Rodman and Mary Rotch should be allowed to remain as Elders.

Over the next five years, fourteen of those twenty-three men would find themselves brought up by the overseers of the New Bedford Monthly Meeting which resulted in being disowned. An additional five men were disowned in the four years after that. The men who believed that the two women should be allowed to remain as Elders, who were identified by name in the anonymous diary, are listed below. Those who were disowned are identified with *italics*. The numbers refer to their identification in Part 2 of this series.<sup>[2]</sup>

- Samuel Rodman, Jr. (no. 13, son of Elizabeth Rodman)
- *Samuel Rodman* (husband of Elizabeth Rodman, no. 6) – submitted a letter of resignation
- *Francis Rotch* (nephew to Elizabeth Rodman and Mary Rotch) – disowned for non-attendance
- *Micah H. Ruggles* (husband of Lydia Rodman, no. 12) – disowned for non-attendance
- *Peter Barney* (first cousin, once removed of the two women) – disowned for marrying outside the faith

---

<sup>1</sup> Zephaniah W. Pease, ed. *Life in New Bedford A Hundred Years Ago, A Chronicle of the Social, Religious and Commercial History of the Period as Recorded in a Diary Kept by Joseph R. Anthony* (New Bedford, Mass.: George H. Reynolds, 1925), p. 93.

<sup>2</sup> Anonymous Friend/Sarah Morgan?, *Journal, 1823–1825*, MSS 003/186, Friends Historical Library collection of journals, SFHL-MSS-003, Friends Historical Library of Swarthmore College, Swarthmore, Pennsylvania, pp. 49, 70.

- *William Rotch, Jr.* (no. 7, brother of the two women) – disowned for marrying outside the faith (but had requested that he be removed as an Elder before then)
- *Thomas Nye* – submitted a letter of resignation
- Caleb Jenny
- Humphrey Russell
- *Nicholas Davis* – disowned for non-attendance
- *Paul Barney* (second cousin of the two women) – disowned for non-attendance
- *David Coffin* – disowned for non-attendance
- *Enoch Horton* – disowned for non-attendance
- *Jethro Coffin* – disowned for non-attendance
- *Benjamin Rodman* (no. 15, son of Elizabeth Rodman) – disowned for attending meetings of others who were disowned
- *Andrew Robeson* (husband of Anna Rodman, no. 11) – disowned for non-attendance
- *William Coffin* – disowned for attending meetings of others who were disowned
- *Thomas A. Greene* – disowned for attending meetings of others who were disowned
- *William W. Swain* – submitted a letter of resignation
- *Joseph Rotch* (no. 17, nephew of the two women) – disowned for attending meetings of others who were disowned
- *Thomas S. Swain* – disowned for marrying outside the faith
- John Taber
- *William C. Nye* – disowned for marrying outside the faith

The second article in this series, that in which the descendants of William Rotch, who was born about 1650 and died at Salem, Massachusetts circa 1705,<sup>[3]</sup> were identified, included eighty-nine descendants to his third great-grandchildren. Of those eighty-nine individuals, nine of them never became Quakers; twelve of them died as children; eight were born after their parents were disowned; and four were disowned in England and were not associated with what was going on in New Bedford. Of the remaining fifty-six, only twelve remained within the Quaker faith.

This left forty-four individuals who were disowned in two major waves. The first group were those disowned around the time of the issues with Elizabeth Rodman (no. 6) and Mary Rotch (single woman identified under her father William Rotch, no. 5), in the years between 1823 and 1831. This included the two women themselves, as well as their brother William Rotch (no. 7). Of Elizabeth Rodman's surviving seven children, six of them were disowned in the first wave as well as two of William Rotch's (no. 7) children. An additional two children, born abroad of Benjamin Rotch (no. 8, brother of the two

---

<sup>3</sup> William Roche, 1705, Estate Packet, no. 23944, Essex County, Massachusetts, Supreme Judicial Court of Massachusetts, Archives and Records Preservation, Boston, Massachusetts, digitized image on FamilySearch.org.

women) who had returned to New Bedford, were involved in the first wave as were two of the children of Mary Rodman (no. 9) who herself predeceased the issues with her mother Elizabeth Rodman.

In addition to those of the Rotch family who were disowned, spouses also were disowned. Some of them are identified in the list of men above who were against the denial of Eldership to Elizabeth Rodman and Mary Rotch, specifically Samuel Rodman (husband of Elizabeth), Micah H. Ruggles, husband to Lydia Rodman (no. 12) and Andrew Robeson, husband to Anna Rodman (no. 11). Female spouses included Anne Waln (Morgan) Rotch, wife of Francis Rotch (son of no. 8); Rebecca Waln (Morgan) Rotch, wife of William Rotch (no. 10); Charles Waln Morgan, husband of Sarah Rodman (no. 14); Susan Waln (Morgan) Rodman, wife of Benjamin Rodman (no. 15) and Hannah Haydock (Prior) Rodman, wife of Samuel Rodman (no. 13) who was the one child of Elizabeth (Rotch) Rodman's who remained part of the New Bedford Monthly Meeting.

The second wave of disownments, largely involving those who were punished for not attending meetings, was seen predominantly in the 1840s and numbered twenty-two, most of whom were grandchildren of Elizabeth Rodman. It is not surprising that so many of these individuals no longer attended Quaker meetings given that their parents were among the many disowned in the first wave. Those of the first wave sought religious guidance elsewhere and brought their children with them. Within this second wave, some were also disowned for marrying outside the faith, though these individuals likely did not consider themselves to be Quakers anymore since they had not been attending meetings.

For those who were disowned, it wasn't just their being denied membership within the Society of Friends, but also how their reputation would be slighted in print that continued to hound two generations of this family. This was especially true of Micah Haskell Ruggles, who had married Lydia Rodman, daughter of Elizabeth Rodman, 10th 4 mo. 1823 in New Bedford.<sup>[4]</sup>

Ruggles' membership as a Friend was short-lived. He was a Convinced Quaker, having requested to become a member in 1818 through the Longplain Preparative Meeting in Massachusetts. At the time of his request, he was visited by a committee from the New Bedford Monthly Meeting composed of William Rotch, Jr. (brother of Elizabeth Rodman and Mary Rotch), Cornelius Howland, and Abraham Shearman Jr., the latter two being men who would later be on the side to remove the two women as Elders in 1823/1824. According to the New Bedford Monthly Minutes taken at the meeting held 23rd 7 mo. 1818, the committee reported they had visited "him to satisfaction, and [thought] it best he should be received into membership."<sup>[5]</sup>

<sup>4</sup> New Bedford Monthly Meeting, Marriages, 1795–1918, p. 131–2, part of New England Yearly Meeting Records, MS902, N493, 09:B4, bound volume, Special Collections and University Archives, University of Massachusetts Amherst, Amherst, Massachusetts.

<sup>5</sup> New Bedford Monthly Meeting, Men's Minutes, 1808–1828, 401:199, microfilmed in 1950, copies of original records at Rhode Island Historical Society, Providence, R.I. (now

While the reason for Micah's disownment, on 25th 8 mo. 1825 was recorded as non-attendance of meetings, he had been a vocal part of the debate as to what should be done with Elizabeth Rodman and Mary Rotch, according to the anonymous diary.<sup>[6]</sup> And perhaps his lack of willingness to bend to the will of the "Old Lights," specifically Job Otis, resulted in his having a place in the 600-page journal of Otis. Though he did not appear to own a pew at the First Congregational Church of New Bedford, that is where his in-laws had removed to worship, and it is likely that he was there too.<sup>[7]</sup>

Otis's 600-page journal is no longer extant, and it is unknown what happened to it. However, in regard to the "New Light" issues in New Bedford, it had been seen and referenced by William Hodgson in his work *The Society of Friends in the Nineteenth Century: A Historical View of the Successive Convulsions and Schisms Therein During that Period*, which was published in 1875 in two volumes.<sup>[8]</sup> Much of chapter three, "The Outbreak of 'New Lights,' or Ranters, in New England" was influenced by this Otis journal.

While Hodgson has some derogatory things to say about Mary Newhall—whose visit to New Bedford seems to have lit the candle on the "New Lights" there—Hodgson seems to hold Ruggles more accountable for what happened:

Perhaps, however, the most active and mischievous among those who took an early part in these disorders, was one Micah H. Ruggles, a man of about thirty years of age at that time. Job Otis, who knew him well, says of him, that "his natural abilities were rather above mediocrity," "his disposition naturally active and forward," "ardent and unstable in his character," and "had professed several forms of religion, and manifested an intemperate zeal in the support of them all," "very impatient of restraint, and fond of taking the lead in whatever he undertook."

He soon became acquainted with some superficial members of the Society, who were caught by his high pretensions; and he followed this up by professing to have received a command to request membership among Friends. Through the influence of his new acquaintances, Micah was at length—though with great reluctance on the part of some discerning ones—admitted into membership "out of condescension to the weak," as the above-quoted writer [Job Otis] remarks, "and as an expedient to preserve the peace of the Society." The effect of this "expedient" very soon became manifest. Micah in a little time undertook to preach. His discourses were such as might have been expected—an incoherent incongruous medley of some things which he had really learned in his best condition, when favored with a little anointing of the spiritual eye, mixed

---

deposited at University of Massachusetts Amherst Special Collections), digitized image on FamilySearch.org.

<sup>6</sup> Anonymous Friend/Sarah Morgan?, Journal, 1823–1825, MSS 003/186. Friends Historical Library collection of journals, SFHL-MSS-003. Friends Historical Library of Swarthmore College, Swarthmore, Pennsylvania, pp. 40, 43, 46, 50, 56, 59, 63, 64, 68–9, 71–2, 74, 78, 80–1, 84, 86–9, 92, 94–5, 98, 101, 103, 108, 111.

<sup>7</sup> First Unitarian Church Records, 1730–1977, [New Bedford], Mss 42, Box 8, Series D, Pew Records, 1813–1923, Sub-Series 1, Deeds, 1813–1878, Folder 1, 1813, 1817, 1818–1826, New Bedford Whaling Museum, New Bedford, Mass.

<sup>8</sup> William Hodgson, *The Society of Friends in the Nineteenth Century: A Historical View of the Successive Convulsions and Schisms Therein During that Period*, 2 vols. (Philadelphia, Penn.: W. Hodgson, 1875), vol. 1, p. 58–9. [hereafter Hodgson, *Friends in the Nineteenth Century*]

with what he had gathered in the natural understanding from the writings of Friends, and with the products and wild vagaries of an excited imagination, and arrogant assumptions of divine authority. And, as is usual in such cases, he found it much easier to utter denunciations against his fellows, than to preach the gospel of peace and good will to men.<sup>[9]</sup>

Interestingly enough, Hodgson cites the journal of John Comly in support of his thoughts on Ruggles, but it appears that Comly, a Quaker minister, was familiar with Ruggles and his in-laws, the Rodmans, and through them, the Rotches. When not being read through the biased view that Hodgson had as a result of Otis's take in his journal, Comly described Ruggles thus:

Micah Ruggles, living near here [Rochester, Mass.], is a young man of about twenty-seven [in 1818] years of age. He had been a military captain; and one from whom the world expected great things, as also his father, being a young man of uncommon activity and energy of mind. He was remarkably awakened about two years ago by the immediate influence of Divine light in his mind, and for a time, while the whirlwind, the earthquake, and the fire were passing through his soul, it seemed as if nature might fail, but at length the still small voice was distinguished, and he became as a little child. Great conflicts within and without have attended him, yet all things evidently *working together for good* to his soul. He is now just coming forth in testimony in meetings, in the simplicity of a little child. His views of the spirituality of the work of religion, in the soul are very exalted, ascribing all the power, glory, and honour to Him that sitteth on the throne and to the Lamb for ever and ever.<sup>[10]</sup>

Comly went on to mention that after preaching in Middleborough [Mass.], that he returned to New Bedford, riding with Mary Rotch and Elizabeth Rodman in their carriage to their father's "hospitable mansion" and Comly described their father William Rotch as "now near eighty-four years of age, and alive in the love of Truth; fervently desirous for the advancement thereof among men, and remarkably attentive to Friends engaged therein."<sup>[11]</sup>

Hodgson referred to the Rodmans and the Rotches as "superficial members of the Society" when describing Ruggles above. Hodgson said that Mary Newhall had attached herself to Ruggles and she was "disturbing" the meetings of Friends at Lynn. Hodgson further suggested: "Mary Rotch likewise becoming captivated by [Ruggles's] high-toned assumptions, suffered her judgment to be bewildered, and her imagination and affections to be excited in his favor, to such a degree that she became completely estranged from her judicious friends, and carried off the ground of truth and safety."<sup>[12]</sup>

The Rodmans and the Rotches were far from superficial members of the Society of Friends, though they certainly were wealthy and openminded when it came to theology in general. However, as Comly mentioned, William Rotch, Sr. was true to the faith and was himself an "Old Light."

<sup>9</sup> Ibid., 60, 62.

<sup>10</sup> *Journal of the Life and Religious Labours of John Comly, Late of Byberry, Pennsylvania* (Philadelphia, Penn.: J. Comly's Children, 1853), 267.

<sup>11</sup> Ibid., 268.

<sup>12</sup> Hodgson, *Friends in the Nineteenth Century* [note 8], 63.

As was mentioned in part three, Mary Newhall had been a friend of Elizabeth Rodman and the Rotch family since at least 1817.<sup>[13]</sup> In his article, “The New Light/Old Light Conflict Among New Bedford Quakers,” which he wrote in 1994, T. Noel Stern points out that the “New Light Revolution began around 1816 in Lynn and Salem, and spread to New Bedford. The movement climaxed in Salem Monthly Meeting (comprising Lynn and Salem) in 1822–1823, and in New Bedford in 1823–24, . . . [Mary Newhall] visited New Bedford after the defeat of the New Lights in her Meeting . . .”<sup>[14]</sup> Mary Newhall resided in Lynn and was a member of Salem Monthly Meeting until her disownment before February 1823, when she went to preach in New Bedford. In addition to the general support shown to Newhall by Elizabeth Rodman and Mary Rotch, one of Newhall’s staunchest defendants within the New Bedford Monthly Meeting was Elizabeth’s son Benjamin Rodman, to whom Stern attributes the anonymous journal. Stern describes Newhall as “a thoughtful independent person in her thirties, with a gift for rhetoric. She believed in continuing revelation.”<sup>[15]</sup>

With regard to Ruggles, the seeds for the New Light movement had already been sown in Lynn and Salem before he, who was born in 1791 at Rochester, Massachusetts, had even requested to become a member of the Society of Friends. That request was brought to the New Bedford Monthly Meeting by the Longplain Preparative Meeting held 25th 6 mo. 1818.<sup>[16]</sup> While Ruggles would certainly embrace the New Light movement himself and begin to preach about it, the blame he has been given for somehow infecting Mary Rotch and Mary Newhall seems to be a stretch.

In addition to their friendship and communication with Mary Newhall, another of William Rotch Sr.’s children, Thomas Rotch, who was born in 1767 and married Charity Rodman, sister to Samuel Rodman (husband of Elizabeth (Rotch) Rodman) was in communication with Elias Hicks, himself a person who would cause controversy among the Society of Friends resulting in the first major schism of the Quakers—producing a sect of followers who took his name, the Hicksites, which is discussed further below. Thomas Rotch had known Hicks for some years. One of Hicks’s earliest surviving letters to Thomas Rotch was written from New York, 11th 12 mo. 1793.<sup>[17]</sup> Their communication would continue at least until 1819.<sup>[18]</sup> According to Elias Hicks’s journal, he had spent time in the houses of both Thomas Rotch in New Bedford and Samuel Rodman in Nantucket in 1793.<sup>[19]</sup>

<sup>13</sup> Mary Newhall to Samuel and Elizabeth Rodman, 6 mo. 1817, SFHL-RG5-132, Box 2, Folder 19, Friends Historical Library, Swarthmore College, Swarthmore, Pennsylvania.

<sup>14</sup> T. Noel Stern, “New Light/Old Light Conflict Among New Bedford Quakers,” 1994, 1, part of New England Yearly Meeting Records, MS 902, N493, Box 8, Special Collections and University Archives, University of Massachusetts Amherst, Amherst, Massachusetts.

<sup>15</sup> *Ibid.*

<sup>16</sup> New Bedford MM Men’s Minutes [note 5], 401:198.

<sup>17</sup> Elias Hicks letter to Thomas Rotch, New York, 11th 12 mo, 1793 “Thomas and Charity Rotch Papers,” B-87-1, Massillon Public Library, digitized image on OhioMemory.org.

<sup>18</sup> Elias Hicks letter to Thomas Rotch, Jericho, 28<sup>th</sup> 12 mo. 1819 “Thomas and Charity Rotch Papers,” B-87-5, Massillon Public Library, digitized image on OhioMemory.org.

<sup>19</sup> Elias Hicks, *Journal of the Life and Religious Labours of Elias Hicks*, 5th ed. (New York: Isaac T. Hopper, 1832), 42.

From all this, it can be seen that the Rotches and the Rodmans had an open mind when it came to religious beliefs. As a result, it should not be surprising to find that they were welcoming of Mary Newhall and her beliefs in New Bedford. Likewise, while Thomas Rotch died at Mount Pleasant, Jefferson County, Ohio, 14th 9 mo. 1823<sup>[20]</sup>—which was just before things began to happen in New Bedford—his wife Charity did not die until after her two sisters-in-law had been removed as Elders. She was aware of what had transpired and did not cut off ties with them.<sup>[21]</sup>

Even Samuel Rodman, Jr., son of Elizabeth, who chose to remain within the Quaker faith, was accepting of his wife and the five of his six children who themselves elected to attend another denomination or married outside the faith, all of whom were disowned.

Otis, whose surviving journal was published by his children in 1861, and goes up to the sixth month of 1822 (which is before the issues with Elizabeth Rodman and Mary Rotch came to a head), commented on the New Light movement's influence in general on the Quaker community:

The state of Society with us at the present time [not dated], is such as to render it very trying and difficult for the upright in heart to take an active part in it; and to require more than an ordinary qualification therefor, as may be seen from my account of it elsewhere. There seem to be but few, rightly qualified to labor with becoming zeal in the support of our precious testimonies, and of our Christian discipline. There has been a dealing as with a slack hand. From giving way to freshly ease, carnal reasonings and vain speculations, some who have long been looked up to as the leaders of the people, have been taken in the snare of the fowler, carried away with a spirit of delusion, and made to behave a lie. The lax administration of the discipline which has prevailed, has made way for a weight of influence in favor of liberty and ease hard to be surmounted or withstood. These things have opened the door for a libertine, ranting and unbelieving spirit to get up, under pretensions to greater spirituality, &c., to the great disturbance of the peace and harmony of the Society.

As it has fallen to my lot to take an active and somewhat conspicuous part in opposing innovations and wrong things, and to be viewed by the apostate, libertines and deluded ones, as one of their principal opposers; so I have often, of latter time especially, had to look very narrowly to the foundation on which I stood and to the spirit by which I was actuated.<sup>[22]</sup>

Otis, along with his wife Deborah and their children James Davis, Rebecca, Samuel Davis, Sarah, and Joseph and his wife Hannah (Wilson) Otis, removed to Scipio Monthly Meeting in New York. Their certificate of removal was written 24th 10 mo. 1833. As was alluded to in the previous article (part 3), Otis was still a vocal and staunch Old Light in 1831 when the Quaker minister Joseph Hoag visited New Bedford Monthly Meeting in 1831:

---

<sup>20</sup> Barbara K. Wittman, *Thomas and Charity Rotch: The Quaker Experience of Settlement in Ohio in the Early Republic 1800–1824* (Newcastle upon Tyne, England: Cambridge Scholars Publishing, 2015), 192.

<sup>21</sup> *Ibid.*, 203.

<sup>22</sup> Job Otis, *Memoirs of the Life and Religious Exercises of Job Otis* (Sherwoods, N.Y.: His children, 1861), 163–4.

I also attended the Preparative meeting at Longplain where friends were in a languid state my mind was dipped into a feeling sense and near sympathy with them and felt strengthened to minister to them that my Master gave me for them and found relief. After meeting [Longplain Preparative Meeting] I returned to New Bedford and attended their Preparative meeting in it my mind was dipped into a feeling sympathy with the suffering seed of life and those that suffered patiently with it a little portion was given me from my Master for them which I in ready cheerfulness handed to them not feeling clear I had to labor plain with those that in a firey false zeal wanted to drive furiously it was painful labor . . .<sup>[23]</sup>

Joseph Hoag died in 1846 but it was in 1860, when publication of his journal was undertaken, that the children of Job and Deborah Otis wanted part of the above entry removed, as they felt that “those that in a firey false zeal . . .” referred to their parents. Not surprisingly this resulted in a disagreement with some strongly believing that the journal should not be edited in any form. As a result, a schism formed in the Scipio Monthly Meeting and two versions of Hoag’s journal were published.<sup>[24]</sup>

Those who believed that Hoag’s journal should remain as it was became known as “Kingites,” after John King, while those who supported the Otis family in wanting the specific passage removed became known as “Otisites.” In the King version of the diary, the entry recorded above, with some grammatical editing, was included.<sup>[25]</sup> Meanwhile in the Otis version, the entry was edited as such:

. . . hence to Long Plain and attended their Preparative Meeting, where Friends were in a languid state. My mind was dipped into a feeling sense and near sympathy with them. I felt strengthened to minister that unto them which my Master gave me, and found relief.<sup>[26]</sup>

The King meeting went on to meet until 1880. Meanwhile the Otisites, also referred to as “Primitive” Friends of the Scipio Quarterly Meeting, would eventually join the Canada Yearly Meeting (Conservative) as a quarterly meeting in 1916.<sup>[27]</sup>

While the rift between the Old Lights and the New Lights of New Bedford took place in 1823–24, the rest of the Society of Friends within the United States would find themselves shaken just four years later with its first major schism. Described by Thomas D. Hamm, professor of history and Quaker scholar in residence at Earlham College (Richmond, Indiana), the emersion of the Hicksite separation was “the watershed event in American Quaker history.”<sup>[28]</sup>

<sup>23</sup> Journal of Joseph Hoag, HC.MC-975-07-044, Haverford College Quaker & Special Collections, Haverford, Pennsylvania, 274.

<sup>24</sup> A. Day Bradley, “New York Yearly Meeting at Poplar Ridge and the Primitive Friends,” *Quaker History*, 68 (1979):75–82, specifically 77.

<sup>25</sup> *Journal of the Life of Joseph Hoag, An Eminent Minister of the Gospel, in the Society of Friends* (Auburn, N.Y.: Knapp & Peck, Printers, Auburn Journal Office, 1861), 339.

<sup>26</sup> *A Journal of the Life and Gospel Labors of that Devoted Servant and Minister of Christ, Joseph Hoag* (Sherwoods, N.Y.: David Heston, 1860), 331. In this version, the entry completely deletes the visit to New Bedford Preparative Meeting.

<sup>27</sup> Christopher Densmore, “Historical Chart and Outline of New York Yearly Meeting Since 1800,” *Quaker History*, 75 (1986):123–125, specifically 125.

<sup>28</sup> Thomas D. Hamm, *The Transformation of American Quakerism: Orthodox Friends, 1800–1907* (Bloomington, Ind.: Indiana University Press, 1988), 15.



The Hicksites take their name from Elias Hicks, a farmer and a Quaker preacher who hailed from Jericho, New York. Despite having long been a minister for the Friends and traveling around North America in that capacity, his preaching eventually began to raise eyebrows, especially among those who held to the old traditions, who after the separation would be known as Orthodox Friends and eventually Conservative Friends. In much the same way that Mary Newhall and the Rotches and Rodmans believed in the Inner Light, likewise Hicks believed that the Inner Light outranked or should hold more sway with the Friends than what was printed on the pages of the Holy Bible. Many of the doctrines found among most ecumenical sects—including atonement, original sin, and the devil—were dismissed by Hicks. He believed strongly that Friends should listen to that small voice, the Inner Light, in all things and considered the Bible’s teachings to be “far inferior” to the promptings of the Holy Spirit.<sup>[29]</sup>

Hamm suggests that “Hicks was contending for democratic liberty of thought and freedom of conscience against evangelical authoritarianism.” Additionally, looking at the socioeconomic conditions of those who believed in Hicks’ teachings and would ultimately be disowned as a result, Hamm referenced a study by Robert W. Doherty who looked at this aspect of the separation within the Philadelphia Yearly Meeting. Doherty claimed that those who were not as economically successful tended to lean toward the teachings of Hicks. Hamm questions the validity of this explanation, pointing out that other yearly meetings, including New England and North Carolina, did not experience a similar split, instead remaining united as Orthodox Friends.<sup>[30]</sup>

Hamm’s mention of New England Yearly Meeting’s remaining united as what would become Orthodox Friends gives pause in the consideration of what Salem and New Bedford Monthly Meetings had just experienced with the “New Light” upheaval. In fact, in the notes at the end of Hamm’s book in regard to the Hicksite separation, the “New Light” situation experienced in Massachusetts is referenced. Unlike the socioeconomic situation identified within the Philadelphia Year Meeting, in New Bedford especially, it was those who were among the more prosperous who were open to the New Light beliefs.

In his article, “The New-Light Quakers of Lynn and New Bedford,” published in *The New England Quarterly* (September 1959), Frederick B. Tolles in fact points to the prosperity of certain individuals within the two towns:

One does not have to be an economic determinist to see a connection between the disturbances which racked the Quaker meetings at Lynn and New Bedford and the new-found prosperity which came to the two towns after the War of 1812, when Lynn was burgeoning as the center of the American boot-and-shoe industry and New Bedford was taking over Nantucket’s world primacy in the big business of catching whales.<sup>[31]</sup>

---

<sup>29</sup> Ibid., 16.

<sup>30</sup> Ibid.

<sup>31</sup> Frederick B. Tolles, “The New-Light Quakers of Lynn and New Bedford,” *The New England Quarterly* (vol. 32, no. 3 – Sept. 1959):291–319, specifically 292.

In New Bedford the Rotches and Rodmans were among the richest of those in the whaling business. As was mentioned before though, William Rotch, Sr., who would die in 1828, was indeed one of the wealthiest men in New Bedford and yet he remained a staunch Old Light. After his daughter Mary Rotch was removed as an Elder and eventually disowned, it did apparently cause some tension between the two, though by the time of his death they were again close.

Returning to Hicks's adamant adherence to the Inner Light, the Rodmans, as seen in the anonymous diary, were similarly espousing reliance on and the purpose of the Inner Light. During the Quarterly Meeting that took place in New Bedford 25th 12 mo. 1823, the vocal Benjamin Rodman stated, "Liberty of conscience is the rock on which our society is established & now he believed it was restrained in no society more than in ours."<sup>[32]</sup>

Later that same day during the New Bedford Monthly Meeting, the following was recorded in the diary:

Saml Rodman again received the connection of this question [that of removing Elizabeth Rodman and Mary Rotch as Elders] with liberty of conscience. Job Otis said the question of conscience had nothing to do with it, but the maintaining the good order & discipline of the society, if our members should join the usages of other societies & violate our rules they might do it conscientiously but they will have gone out from among us & are no longer of us.<sup>[33]</sup>

This simple comment and response sums up not only the New Light issue but also to a degree that of the Hicksite separation—the reliance on the Inner Light. For those who did not want change from the strict rules of the faith, as stated by Otis, the Inner Light was not leading the follower toward the faith, but away from it.

As Tolles further describes:

The Old-Light Leaders, the conservators of tradition, considered themselves the guardians of true Quakerism, apostolic successors to the original disciples of the Inner Light; in their eyes the "new light" which the opposite party preached was simply "old darkness"—not the authentic inward flash of divine illumination but the weak and fallible faculty of natural reason. The New Lights, for their part, denied that they stood for any novel principle; they were only returning, they insisted, to the Inner Light as the early Friends had known it, unobscured by the incrustations of tradition, undistorted by the lens of a rigid discipline.<sup>[34]</sup>

In the end, the inability to allow those who believed in following their conscience or Inner Light as individuals would result in the disownment of Elias Hicks and all those who followed him. While this separation affected many

---

<sup>32</sup> Anonymous Friend/Sarah Morgan?, *Journal*, 1823–1825, MSS 003/186. Friends Historical Library collection of journals, SFHL-MSS-003. Friends Historical Library of Swarthmore College, Swarthmore, Pennsylvania, 40.

<sup>33</sup> Anonymous Friend/Sarah Morgan?, *Journal*, 1823–1825, MSS 003/186. Friends Historical Library collection of journals, SFHL-MSS-003. Friends Historical Library of Swarthmore College, Swarthmore, Pennsylvania, p. 44.

<sup>34</sup> "The New-Light Quakers" [note 31], 291–319, specifically 294.

more members of the Society of Friends, it was for much the same reason that so many of the Rotches and Rodmans found themselves likewise disowned.

And for many of the Rotches and Rodmans of New Bedford, the decision to remove Elizabeth (Rotch) Rodman and Mary Rotch as Elders caused a cascading of dominoes that resulted in these families no longer attached to a faith that had guided the Rotches for close to 100 years and the Rodmans for almost 200.

*(concluded)*

*Rhonda R. McClure is Senior Genealogist of American Ancestors & New England Historic Genealogical Society. She is a consulting editor of the New England Historical and Genealogical Register.*



# Index of Persons for The Rotches and the Rodmans: A Tale of New Bedford Quakerism

*The allocation of pages among the four parts are Part 1: 293–305 (Summer 2023), Part 2: 306–326 (Summer 2023), Part 3: 405–415 (Fall 2023), and Part 4: 95–105 (Winter 2024).*

- |  |   |   |
|--|---|---|
| <b>ALLEN</b><br>Mary (Arnold) 318<br>Stephen 412   | <b>BARNEY</b> <i>cont'd</i><br>Lydia (Starbuck)<br>309<br>Paul 96 412<br>Peter 95 412 | <b>DARLING</b><br>Daniel 295<br>Hannah (Potter)<br>(Rotch) 295–297<br>303 306   |
| <b>ALLINE</b><br>Jane 308  | <b>BARTON</b><br>Hull 410   | <b>DAVIS</b><br>Abraham 412<br>Deborah 101 102<br>407 409<br>Deborah (____)<br>407<br>Hannah (Wilson)<br>(Otis) 101<br>James 101 407<br>412<br>Joseph 101<br>Nathan 412<br>Nicholas 96 412<br>Obadiah 412<br>Rebecca 101<br>Samuel 101<br>Sarah 101<br>Shadrach 319 412 |
| <b>ANGIER</b><br>Elizabeth <sup>6</sup> (Rotch)<br>325   | <b>BORDEN</b><br>Mary 309 311   | <b>DEAN</b><br>John 309<br>Rebecca 309<br>William 309   |
| <b>ANTHONY</b><br><i>family</i> 408<br>Joseph 413–414<br>Joseph R. 95<br>410–411<br>Philip 412   | <b>BROWN</b><br>Mary 324  | <b>DOHERTY</b><br>Robert W. 103   |
| <b>ARNOLD</b><br><i>family</i> 408<br>Elizabeth Rotch <sup>6</sup><br>324<br>James 324<br>Mary 318<br>Mary (Brown) 324<br>Sarah <sup>5</sup> (Rotch) 324<br>Thomas 324 | <b>CACCIA</b><br>Fabio Juliano 324<br>Susan (Rodman)<br>324                           | <b>DWIGHT</b><br>Anna Rodman<br>Robeson 318<br>Gen. William 318   |
| <b>BACON</b><br>Margaret Hope<br>406–407   | <b>CARD</b><br>Mary 302–303   | <b>EDDY</b><br>Job 412  |
| <b>BARKER</b><br>Abraham 412<br>Elizabeth 300 302<br>312–314<br>Elizabeth (Hussey)<br>312<br>Josiah 312  | <b>CLAPP</b><br>Mary 318  | <b>ELLICOTT</b><br>Letitia (Harvey) 315   |
| <b>BARNEY</b><br>Benjamin 308–309<br>Elizabeth 308–309<br>407  | <b>COFFIN</b><br>David 96 412<br>Deborah 307<br>Jethro 96 412<br>William 96 412       |   |
|  | <b>COLEMAN</b><br>Nathaniel 308   |   |
|  | <b>COMLY</b><br>John 99   |   |
|  | <b>CORNELL</b><br>Rebecca (Vaughan)<br>307  |   |
|  | <b>CRAIG</b><br>Josephine Wharton<br>322  |   |
|  | <b>CROMWELL</b><br>Oliver 294   |   |

**EMERSON**

George Barrell 312  
 Mary (Rotch)  
 (Fleming) 312

**ENGLAND**

Charles II, King of  
 294

**FARRAR**

Eliza (Rotch) 313  
 Professor John 313

**FIELD**

Susan 311

**FISHER**

Elizabeth Rodman  
 316  
 Letitia (Harvey)  
 (Ellicott) 315  
 Mary<sup>5</sup> (Rodman)  
 314–316  
 Sarah (Logan) 315  
 Sarah Logan 315  
 Thomas 315  
 Thomas Rodman<sup>6</sup>  
 315  
 William Logan  
 315–316

**FLEMING**

John William  
 Charles 312  
 Mary (Rotch) 312

**FOLGER**

Jethro 307–308

**FOX**

George 293–294  
 406 410

**GREENE**

Thomas A. 96  
 412

**GREVILLE**

Charles Francis  
 302

**GRIFFITTS**

Hannah 326

**GRINNELL**

Jos[eph] 299

**HAMM**

Thomas D. 102 103

**HANAFORD**

Phebe 407

**HANDY**

John 305 411

**HARVEY**

Letitia 315

**HASKINS**

W[illia]m 412

**HATHAWAY**

Anna 321  
 Ellen H. (Rodman)  
 321  
 Nathaniel 321

**HAYDOCK**

Hannah 320

**HICKS**

Elias 100 103 104

**HOAG**

Joseph 101–102  
 409

**HODGSON**

William 98–99  
 408

**HORTON**

Enoch 96 412

**HOWES?**

Martha 296 302  
 307

**HOWLAND**

Cornelius 97  
 304–305 319  
 414  
 George 412  
 John 412  
 Wing 412

**HUSSEY**

Elizabeth 312  
 Elizabeth Brown  
 321  
 Elizabeth Rodman  
 (Morgan) 322  
 George 321 322  
 Hatty H. (\_\_\_\_)  
 322  
 Hetty (\_\_\_\_) 321

**JENNY**

Caleb 96 412

**JOHNSON**

Phebe 410

**JUDD**

Isabelle Anne 313

**KING**

John 102

**KINGMAN**

Mary 296

**LANGSTON**

Maria (Rotch) 314  
 Rev. Stephen F.  
 314

**LAWRENCE**

Abbott 325  
 Annie B. 325  
 Katharine (\_\_\_\_)  
 325

**LIVEZEY**

Martha 317

**LOGAN**

Sarah 315

**LOTHROP**

Anna 317

**MACY**

Deborah (Coffin)  
 303 307  
 Love 297 303  
 307–308  
 Thomas 303 307

**MILES**

Ann Smith 321  
 Hannah (\_\_\_\_)  
 321  
 John 321

**MITCHELL**

Maria 407

**MORGAN**

*family* 408  
 Ann (Waln) 316  
 321 323  
 Anne Waln 97  
 313

**MORGAN** *cont'd*

Charles 415  
 Charles Waln 97  
   293 321–322  
 Clara 322 325  
 Elizabeth Rodman  
   322  
 Emily 293 294 322  
   325  
 Hannah (Griffitts)  
   326  
 Helen 325–326  
 Isabel 322  
 Josephine Wharton  
   (Craig) 322  
 Rebecca Waln 97  
   316–317  
 Samuel Rodman 322  
 Sarah (Rodman) 97  
   293  
 Sarah<sup>5</sup> (Rodman)  
   321  
 Sarah R. 405–406n  
 Susan Waln 97  
   323–324  
 Thomas 313 316  
   321 323  
 Thomas Waln 326

**MOTLEY**

Anna (Lothrop) 317  
 Edward 317  
 Ellen (Rodman) 317  
 Emma 316

**MOTT**

Lucretia Coffin 407

**NEWHALL**

Mary 98 99 100  
   101 103 405 406  
   408 409 410 412

**NYE**

Thomas 96 412  
 William C. 96  
 W[illia]m C. 412

**OTIS**

Debby 410–411  
 Deborah (Davis)  
   101 102 407 409

**OTIS** *cont'd*

Ephraim 407  
 Hannah (Wilson)  
   101  
 Job 98 99 101–102  
   407 408 409 410  
   412 413  
 Sarah (\_\_\_\_\_) 407

**PAINE?**

Martha 296 302  
   307

**PENN**

William 293

**POTTER**

Hannah 295–297  
   303 306  
 Mary (\_\_\_\_\_)  
   295–296  
 Nicholas 295–296

**PRIOR**

Edmund 320  
 Hannah (Haydock)  
   320  
 Hannah Haydock  
   97 320–321  
 Harriet Haydock  
   298

**RIDGWAY**

Anne 324  
 Susan 312

**ROACH**

William 295–296  
   296

**ROBESON**

Andrew 96 97  
   317–318 318 412  
 Anna (Rodman) 97  
   316 318  
 Anna<sup>5</sup> (Rodman)  
   317–318  
 Anna Rodman 318  
 Frederic 318  
 Martha 318  
 Martha (Livezey)  
   317  
 Mary (Arnold)  
   (Allen) 318

**ROBESON** *cont'd*

Peter 317  
 Sybil W. (Washburn)  
   317  
 Thomas Rodman<sup>6</sup>  
   317  
 William Rodman  
   316 318

**RODMAN**

*family* 95–105  
   293–305 306–326  
   405 406–407 408  
   410  
*men* 409  
 Alfred 317  
 Anna 97 301 309  
   316 318  
 Anna (Lothrop)  
   (Motley) 317  
 Anna<sup>5</sup> 317–318  
 Anne 297  
 Ann Smith (Miles)  
   321  
 Benjamin 96 97  
   100 104 297 301  
   309 408 409–410  
   412 413–414 415  
 Benjamin<sup>5</sup> 322–323  
 Charity 100 309  
   414  
 Charles 321  
 Clark 299  
 Edmund 320  
 Eliza 298 301  
 Elizabeth 297 311  
 Elizabeth (\_\_\_\_\_)  
   97  
 Elizabeth (Rotch)  
   95 96 97 98 99  
   100 101 104 105  
   297 298 300 301  
   303 304 309 319  
   405 406 408 409  
   411 412 413 414  
 Elizabeth<sup>6</sup> 323  
 Elizabeth Brown  
   (Hussey) 321  
 Elizabeth “Eliza”  
   298 301 309  
 Ellen 317

**RODMAN** *cont'd*

Ellen H. 321  
 Emma (Motley)  
 316  
 Francis 321  
 Hannah Haydock  
 (Prior) 97 320–  
 321  
 Harriet Haydock  
 (Prior) 298  
 John 294–295  
 Lydia 97 297 301  
 309 408  
 Lydia<sup>5</sup> 318–320  
 Mary 97 297 301  
 320 405  
 Mary (Borden) 309  
 311  
 Mary<sup>5</sup> 309 314–316  
 Mary<sup>6</sup> 320  
 Samuel 95 100 104  
 297 298 300 301  
 303 304 309 310  
 406 407 408 409  
 412 413 414  
 Samuel<sup>5</sup> 320–321  
 Samuel Jr. 95 97  
 101 297 298 301  
 310 320 412 413  
 414  
 Samuel William<sup>6</sup>  
 316  
 Sarah 97 293 297  
 301 309  
 Sarah<sup>5</sup> 321–322  
 Susan 324  
 Susan Emlen 321  
 Susan Waln (Mor-  
 gan) 97 323–324  
 Thomas 295 297  
 301 309 311  
 Thomas Rotch  
 321  
 William 297 301  
 William Logan  
 323  
 William Rotch  
 309  
 William Rotch<sup>5</sup>  
 316–317

**ROTCH**

*family* 95–105  
 293–305 306–326  
 405 406–407 408  
 410  
*men* 409  
 Anna (Smith)  
 324–326  
 Anne Waln (Mor-  
 gan) 97 313  
 Benjamin 96–97  
 295–296 296–297  
 300 302 306 307  
 309 313 313–314n  
 Benjamin<sup>2</sup> 306–307  
 Benjamin<sup>3</sup> 307  
 Benjamin<sup>4</sup> 312–314  
 Benjamin Smith  
 325  
 Caroline 314  
 Caroline (Stockton)  
 311  
 Catherine Elizabeth  
 (Wason) 314  
 Charity (Rodman)  
 309 414  
 Clara (Morgan) 322  
 325  
 Dinah (\_\_\_\_\_) 296  
 Edmund 312  
 Eliza 313 410–411  
 Elizabeth 95 96 97  
 98 99 100 101  
 104 105 297 303  
 304 306 309 319  
 405 406 408 409  
 411 412 413 414  
 Elizabeth (Barker)  
 300 302 312–314  
 Elizabeth (Barney)  
 308–309 407  
 Elizabeth (Rodman)  
 311  
 Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> 309  
 Elizabeth<sup>6</sup> 325  
 Emily (Morgan) 293  
 294 322 325  
 Frances 95  
 Francis 308 412  
 413

**ROTCH** *cont'd*

Francis<sup>6</sup> 313  
 Hannah 306  
 Hannah (Potter)  
 295–297 303 306  
 Helen Morgan  
 325–326  
 Isabelle Anne (Judd)  
 313  
 James Smith 326  
 Jane (Alline) 308  
 Joanna 326  
 Joseph 96 295–296  
 297 300 301 302  
 303 306 307 308  
 311 412  
 Joseph<sup>2</sup> 307–308  
 Joseph<sup>3</sup> 308  
 Joseph<sup>5</sup> 324–326  
 Joseph R. 415  
 Love (Macy) 297  
 303 307–308  
 Lydia 309  
 Lydia (Scott) 311  
 Maria 314  
 Martha 312  
 Martha (Howes?)  
 296 302 307  
 Martha (Paine?) 296  
 302 307  
 Mary 95 96 97  
 98 99 101 104  
 105 300 301 302  
 304 306 309–310  
 312 319 407 409  
 411 412 413 414  
 414–415  
 Mary (Kingman)  
 296  
 Mary<sup>4</sup> 308  
 Nancy 308  
 Paine 307  
 Rodman 325–326  
 Samuel 307  
 Sarah (Wason) 314  
 Sarah<sup>5</sup> 311 324  
 Susan (Ridgway) 312  
 Susanna 309  
 Thomas 100 101  
 309 312 414 415

**ROTC** *cont'd*

Thomas Dickason  
314  
William 96 97 99  
100 104 295-297  
302 303 309 313  
407 409 414 415  
William<sup>1</sup> 306  
William<sup>2</sup> 306  
William<sup>3</sup> 308  
308-309  
William<sup>4</sup> 309 311  
William Barker 300  
301 302 314  
William J. 293  
William James 322  
325  
William Jr. 319  
William Jr. 311  
William Rodman  
311  
W[illia]m 411 412

**ROTH**

Benjamin 295-296  
Joseph 295-296  
William 295-296

**ROUTH**

Martha 302

**RUGGLES**

*family* 408  
Albert 320  
Alfred 320  
George William<sup>6</sup>  
319  
Lydia (Rodman) 97  
408  
Lydia<sup>5</sup> (Rodman)  
318-320  
Maj. Elisha 318  
Mary (Clapp) 318  
Mary Clapp 319  
M. H. 409  
Micah H. 95 97  
408-409 412  
Micah Haskell  
97 98-99 100  
318-320

**RUSSELL**

*family* 408  
Abr[aha]m 412

**RUSSELL** *cont'd*

Eliza 299  
Humphrey 96 412  
Mary 409  
Perry 409-410  
Seth 412  
Susan 409

**SCOTT**

Lydia 311

**SHEARMAN**

Abraham 97 319  
407-408 409-410  
412 414

**SMITH**

Anna 324-326  
Anne (Ridgway)  
324  
Asa 412  
Ezra 412  
James 324

**STARBUCK**

Lydia 309

**STERN**

T. Noel 100

**STOCKTON**

Caroline 311  
Richard 311  
Susan (Field) 311

**SWAIN**

Thomas S. 96 412  
William W. 96 412

**TABER**

Benjamin 412  
Francis 409-410  
John 96 412

**TALLMAN**

W[illia]m 412

**TOLLES**

Frederick B. 103  
104

**TUCKER**

Alanson 318  
Martha (Robeson)  
318

**TUTTLE**

Charles M. 324

**TUTTLE** *cont'd*

Elizabeth Rotch<sup>6</sup>  
(Arnold) 324

**VAUGHAN**

Rebecca 307

**WALN**

Ann 316 321 323  
Anne 313  
Rebecca 316-317  
Thomas 326

**WASHBURN**

Sybil W. 317

**WASON**

Catherine Elizabeth  
314  
Sarah 314

**WELD**

Elizabeth<sup>6</sup> (Rodman)  
323  
Francis Minot 323

**WILSON**

Hannah 101

**WING**

Edward 319 412

**WISTER**

Sarah Logan  
(Fisher) 315  
William 315

**WORCESTER**

Alice 319  
Rev. Benjamin 319  
Thomas 319

**WRIGHT**

Martha Coffin 407

**NO SURNAME**

Alice 319  
Deborah 407  
Dinah 296  
Elizabeth 97 302  
Hannah 321  
Hatty H. 322  
Hetty 321  
Katharine 325  
Martha 296 302 307  
Mary 295-296  
Sarah 407



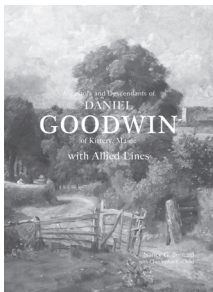
## Quarterly News



Please note these recent NEHGS developments. For more news, and more detail, read *American Ancestors* magazine and, of course, consult [AmericanAncestors.org](http://AmericanAncestors.org), your portal to all that NEHGS has to offer.

### New Publications

---

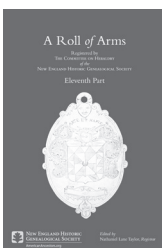


#### **Ancestors and Descendants of Daniel Goodwin of Kittery, Maine—with Allied Lines**

*By Nancy G. Bernard with Christopher C. Child*

8-¼ x 10-¼ hardcover, 276 pages, illustrated

Daniel Goodwin was well-established in the town of Kittery, Province of Maine, by 1652. He married Margaret Spencer, daughter and granddaughter of two of the earliest settlers there. Their descendants migrated from Maine to New Hampshire, then to Nova Scotia as original grantees, finally returning to New England and eventually settling in New Jersey and Massachusetts. Surnames covered in this genealogy include Chadbourne, Derehaugh, Godbold, Goodwin, Hopkins, Kenney, Nickerson, and Spencer. The Kennys were one of the oldest families to settle Cape Cod, Massachusetts; the Nickerson immigrant ancestor was the first English settler of today's town of Chatham. Daniel Goodwin's story begins with his English ancestors and continues to the present day, following one line of American descendants for fourteen generations.

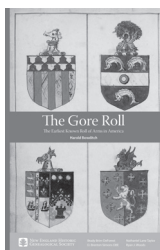


#### **A Roll of Arms Registered by the Committee on Heraldry of the New England Historic Genealogical Society, Eleventh Part**

*Edited by Nathaniel Lane Taylor*

6 x 9 paperback, 72 pages, illustrated

The Committee on Heraldry was established in 1864 within the New England Historic Genealogical Society to study coats of arms and the people who bore them in the United States. The Roll of Arms project, begun in 1914, is a record of settlers in the colonies or immigrants to the United States who were entitled to coats of arms under the customs of their mother countries. This newest installment, the Eleventh Part, is introduced with an updated history of the Committee and the Roll of Arms. It includes new entries for seventy-two immigrants to all parts of the United States, from the British Isles and seven other European countries, between 1587 and 1895, with a blazon of each coat and crest, biographical or genealogical identification of the immigrant, and notes of interest on the heraldry. Every coat of arms is illustrated in black and white.



### Coming Soon!

---

*The Gore Roll: The Earliest Known Roll of Arms in America* will be published in collaboration with Palfrey Press in time for the 36th International Congress of Genealogical and Heraldic Sciences, hosted by American Ancestors in September 2024 (see back cover for more).

# The 36th International Congress of Genealogical and Heraldic Sciences

September 24–28, 2024 | Boston, Massachusetts

Join us for this renowned biennial conference—the first ever to be held in the United States! Explore the theme of **Origins, Journeys, Destinations** through:

- More than 54 sessions over 3 days
- Speakers & experts from around the world
- Social events & cultural excursions
- Special exhibits of heraldic & genealogical treasures
- Vendor hall

[Register today at AmericanAncestors.org/icghs-2024](https://AmericanAncestors.org/icghs-2024)

## Keynote Speakers



**Henry Louis Gates, Jr.**  
*American literary critic,  
professor, historian,  
and filmmaker*



**Luc Duerloo**  
*Historian of early modern  
politics and political culture*

Hosted by  
 **American Ancestors**  
by NEW ENGLAND HISTORIC GENEALOGICAL SOCIETY



**Our Patron**  
Brady Brim-DeForest of  
Balvaire Castle, Baron of Balvaire

**Our Sponsor**  
 **FamilySearch**